
Title: The Road to Wigan Pier

Author: George Orwell

PART ONE

1

The first sound in the mornings was the clumping of the mill-girls' clogs down the cobbled street. Earlier than that, I suppose, there were factory whistles which I was never awake to hear.

My bed was in the right-hand corner on the side nearest the door.

There was another bed across the foot of it and jammed hard against it (it

had to be in that position to allow the door to open) so that I had to

sleep with my legs doubled up; if I straightened them out I kicked the

occupant of the other bed in the small of the back. He was an elderly man $\ \ \,$

named Mr Reilly, a mechanic of sorts and employed 'on top' at one of the

coal pits. Luckily he had to go to work at five in the morning, so I could $\,$

uncoil my legs and have a couple of hours' proper sleep after he was gone.

In the bed opposite there was a Scotch miner who had been injured in a pit

accident (a huge chunk of stone pinned him to the ground and it was a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

hundred pounds compensation. He was a big handsome

man of forty, with

grizzled hair and a clipped moustache, more like a
sergeant-major than a

miner, and he would lie in bed till late in the day, smoking a short pipe.

The other bed was occupied by a succession of commercial travellers,

newspaper-canvassers, and hire-purchase touts who generally stayed for a

couple of nights. It was a double bed and much the best in the room. I had

slept in it myself my first night there, but had been manoeuvred out of it

to make room for another lodger. I believe all newcomers spent their first

night in the double bed, which was used, so to speak, as bait. All the

windows were kept tight shut, with a red sandbag jammed in the bottom, and

in the morning the room stank like a ferret's cage. You did not notice it

when you got up, but if you went out of the room and came back, the smell $\$

hit you in the face with a smack.

I never discovered how many bedrooms the house contained, but strange

to say there was a bathroom, dating from before the Brookers' time.

Downstairs there was the usual kitchen living-room with its huge open range

burning night and day. It was lighted only by a skylight, for on one side

of it was the shop and on the other the larder, which opened into some dark $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

subterranean place where the tripe was stored. Partly blocking the door of

the larder there was a shapeless sofa upon which Mrs Brooker, our landlady,

lay permanently ill, festooned in grimy blankets. She had a big, pale

yellow, anxious face. No one knew for certain what was the matter with her;

I suspect that her only real trouble was over-eating. In front of the fire

there was almost always a line of damp washing, and in the middle of the

room was the big kitchen table at which the family and all the lodgers ate.

I never saw this table completely uncovered, but I saw its various $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

wrappings at different times. At the bottom there was a layer of old

newspaper stained by Worcester Sauce; above that a sheet of sticky white

oil-cloth; above that a green serge cloth; above that a coarse linen cloth,

never changed and seldom taken off. Generally the crumbs from breakfast

were still on the table at supper. I used to get to know individual crumbs

by sight and watch their progress up and down the table from day to day.

The shop was a narrow, cold sort of room. On the. outside of the

window a few white letters, relics of ancient chocolate advertisements,

were scattered like stars. Inside there was a slab upon which lay the great

white folds of tripe, and the grey flocculent stuff known as 'black tripe',

and the ghostly translucent feet of pigs, ready boiled. It was the ordinary

'tripe and pea' shop, and not much else was stocked except bread,

cigarettes, and tinned stuff. 'Teas' were advertised in the window, but if

a customer demanded a cup of tea he was usually put off with excuses. $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Mr}}$

Brooker, though out of work for two years, was a miner by trade, but he and

his wife had been keeping shops of various kinds as a side-line all their

lives. At one time they had had a pub, but they had lost their licence for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

allowing gambling on the premises. I doubt whether any of their businesses

had ever paid; they were the kind of people who run a business chiefly in

order to have something to grumble about. Mr Brooker was a dark, small-

boned, sour, Irish-looking man, and astonishingly dirty. I don't think I

ever once saw his hands clean. As Mrs Brooker was now an invalid he

prepared most of the food, and like all people with permanently dirty hands

he had a peculiarly intimate, lingering manner of handling things. If he

gave you a slice of bread-and-butter there was always a black thumb-print

on it. Even in the early morning when he descended into the mysterious \mbox{den}

behind Mrs Brooker's sofa and fished out the tripe, his hands were already

black. I heard dreadful stories from the other lodgers about the place

where the tripe was kept. Blackbeetles were said to swarm there. I do not

know how often fresh consignments of tripe were ordered, but it was at long

intervals, for Mrs Brooker used to date events by it. 'Let me see now, I've

had in three lots of froze (frozen tripe) since that happened,' etc. We

lodgers were never given tripe to eat. At the time I imagined that this

was because tripe was too expensive; I have since thought that it was

merely because we knew too much about it. The Brookers never ate tripe themselves, I noticed.

The only permanent lodgers were the Scotch miner, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Mr}}$ Reilly, two old-

age pensioners, and an unemployed man on the P.A.C. named Joe--he was the

kind of person who has no surname. The Scotch miner

was a bore when you got

to know him. Like so many unemployed men he spent too much time reading

newspapers, and if you did not head him off he would discourse for hours

about such things as the Yellow Peril, trunk murders, astrology, and the

conflict between religion and science. The old-age pensioners had, as

usual, been driven from their homes by the Means Test. They handed their

weekly ten shillings over to the Brookers and in return got the kind of

accommodation you would expect for ten shillings; that is, a bed in the

attic and meals chiefly of bread-and-butter. One of them was of 'superior'

type and was dying of some malignant disease--cancer, I believe. He only

got out of bed on the days when he went to draw his pension. The other,

called by everyone Old Jack, was an ex-miner aged seventy-eight who had

worked well over fifty years in the pits. He was alert and intelligent, but

curiously enough he seemed only to remember his boyhood experiences and to

have forgotten all about the modem mining machinery and improvements. He

used to tell me tales of fights with savage horses in the narrow galleries

underground. When he heard that I was arranging to go down several coal

mines he was contemptuous and declared that a man of $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ size (six feet two

and a half) would never manage the 'travelling'; it was no use telling him

that the 'travelling' was better than it used to be. But he was friendly to

everyone and used to give us all a fine shout of 'Good night, boys!' as he

crawled up the stairs to his bed somewhere under the rafters. What I most

admired about Old Jack was that he never cadged; he was generally out-of

tobacco towards the end of the week, but he always refused to smoke anyone

else's. The Brookers had insured the lives of both old-age pensioners with

one of the tanner-a-week companies. It was said that they were overheard

anxiously asking the insurance-tout 'how long people lives when they've got cancer'.

Joe, like the Scotchman, was a great reader of newspapers and spent

almost his entire day in the public library. He was the typical unmarried

unemployed man, a derelict-looking, frankly ragged creature with a round,

almost childish face on which there was a naively naughty expression. He

looked more like a neglected little boy than a grown-up man. I suppose it

is the complete lack of responsibility that makes so many of these men look $\,$

younger than their ages. From Joe's appearance I took him to be about

twenty-eight, and was amazed to learn that he was forty-three. He had a

love of resounding phrases and was very proud of the astuteness with which

he had avoided getting married. He often said to me, 'Matrimonial chains is

a big item,' evidently feeling this to be a very subtle and portentous $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

remark. His total income was fifteen shillings a week, and he paid out six

or seven to the Brookers for his bed. I sometimes used to see him making

himself a cup of tea over the kitchen fire, but for the rest he got his

meals somewhere out of doors; it was mostly slices of bread-and-marg and

packets of fish and chips, I suppose.

Besides these there was a floating clientele of commercial travellers

of the poorer sort, travelling actors--always common in the North because

most of the larger pubs hire variety artists at the week-ends--and

newspaper-canvassers. The newspaper-canvassers were a type I had never met

before. Their job seemed to me so hopeless, so appalling that I wondered

how anyone could put up with such a thing when prison was a possible

alternative. They were employed mostly by weekly or Sunday papers, and they

were sent from town to town, provided with maps and given a list of streets

which they had to 'work' each day. If they failed to secure a minimum of

twenty orders a day, they got the sack. So long as they kept up their

twenty orders a day they received a small salary--two pounds a week, I

think; on any order over the twenty they drew a tiny commission. The thing

is not so impossible as it sounds, because in working-class districts every

family takes in a twopenny weekly paper and changes it every few weeks; but

I doubt whether anyone keeps a job of that kind long. The newspapers engage

poor desperate wretches, out-of-work clerks and commercial travellers and

the like, who for a while make frantic efforts and keep their sales up to

the minimum; then as the deadly work wears them down they are sacked and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) ^{2}$

fresh men are taken on. I got to know two who were employed by one of the

more notorious weeklies. Both of them were middle-aged men with families to

support, and one of them was a grandfather. They were on their feet ten

hours a day, 'working' their appointed streets, and then busy late into the

night filling in blank forms for some swindle their paper was running--

one of those schemes by which you are 'given' a set of crockery if you take

out a six weeks' subscription and send a two-shilling postal order as well.

The fat one, the grandfather, used to fall asleep with his head on a pile

of forms. Neither of them could afford the pound a week which the Brookers

charged for full board. They used to pay a small sum for their beds and

make shamefaced meals in a corner of the kitchen off bacon and bread-and-

margarine which they stored in their suit-cases.

The Brookers had large numbers of sons and daughters, most of whom had $\,$

long since fled from home. Some were in Canada 'at Canada', as Mrs Brooker

used to put it. There was only one son living near by, a large pig-like

young man employed in a garage, who frequently came to the house for his

meals. His wife was there all day with the two children, and most of the

cooking and laundering was done by her and by ${\tt Emmie},$ the fiancee of another

son who was in London. Emmie was a fair-haired, sharp-nosed, unhappy-

looking girl who worked at one of the mills for some starvation wage, but $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

nevertheless spent all her evenings in bondage at the Brookers' house. $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

gathered that the marriage was constantly being postponed and would

probably never take place, but Mrs Brooker had already appropriated ${\tt Emmie}$

as a daughter-in-law, and nagged her in that peculiar watchful, loving way

that invalids have. The rest of the housework was

done, or not done, by Mr

Brooker. Mrs Brooker seldom rose from her sofa in the kitchen (she spent

the night there as well as the day) and was too ill to do anything except

eat stupendous meals. It was Mr Brooker who attended to the shop, gave the

lodgers their food, and 'did out' the bedrooms. He was always moving with

incredible slowness from one hated job to another. Often the beds were

still unmade at six in the evening, and at any hour of the day you were

liable to meet Mr Brooker on the stairs, carrying a full chamber-pot which

he gripped with his thumb well over the rim. In the mornings he sat by the

fire with a tub of filthy water, peeling potatoes at the speed of a slow-

motion picture. I never saw anyone who could peel potatoes with quite such

an air of brooding resentment. You could see the hatred of this 'bloody

woman's work', as he called it, fermenting inside him, a kind of bitter

juice. He was one of those people who can chew their grievances like a cud.

Of course, as I was indoors a good deal, I heard all about the $\,$

Brookers' woes, and how everyone swindled them and was ungrateful to them,

and how the shop did not pay and the lodging-house hardly paid. By local $\,$

standards they were not so badly off, for, in some way I did not

understand, Mr Brooker was dodging the Means Test and drawing an allowance

from the P.A.C., but their chief pleasure was talking about their

grievances to anyone who would listen. Mrs Brooker used to lament by the

hour, lying on her sofa, a soft mound of fat and

self-pity, saying the same

things over and over again.' We don't seem to get no customers nowadays. I

don't know 'ow it is. The tripe's just a-laying there day after day--such

beautiful tripe it is, too! It does seem 'ard, don't it now ?' etc., etc.,

etc. All Mrs Brookers' laments ended with' It does seem 'ard, don't it now?'

like the refrain of a ballade. Certainly it was true that the shop did

not pay. The whole place had the unmistakable dusty, flyblown air of a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

business that is going down. But it would have been quite useless to

explain to them why nobody came to the shop, even if one had had the face

to do it; neither was capable of understanding that last year's dead

bluebottles supine in the shop window are not good for trade.

But the thing that really tormented them was the thought of those two

old-age pensioners living in their house, usurping floor-space, devouring

food, and paying only ten shillings a week. I doubt whether they were

really losing money over the old-age pensioners, though certainly the

profit on ten shillings a week must have been very small. But in their eyes

the two old men were a kind of dreadful parasite who had fastened on them $\,$

and were living on their charity. Old Jack they could just tolerate,

because he kept out-of-doors most of the day, but they really hated the

bedridden one, Hooker by name. Mr Brooker had a queer way of pronouncing

his name, without the H and with a long $U--'U\ker'$. What tales I heard

about old Hooker and his fractiousness, the nuisance

of making his bed, the

way he 'wouldn't eat' this and 'wouldn't eat' that, his endless ingratitude

and, above all, the selfish obstinacy with which he refused to die! The

Brookers were quite openly pining for him to die. When that happened they

could at least draw the insurance money. They seemed to feel him there,

eating their substance day after day, as though he had been a living worm

in their bowels. Sometimes Mr Brooker would look up from his potato-

peeling, catch my eye, and jerk his head with a look of inexpressible

bitterness towards the ceiling, towards old Hooker's room. 'It's a b-,

ain't it?' he would say. There was no need to say
more; I had heard all

about old Hooker's ways already. But the Brookers had grievances of one

kind and another against all their lodgers, myself included, no doubt. Joe,

being on the P.A.C., was practically in the same category as the old-age

pensioners. The Scotchman paid a pound a week, but he was indoors most of

the day and they 'didn't like him always hanging round the place', as they

put it. The newspaper-canvassers were out all day, but the Brookers bore

them a grudge for bringing in their own food, and even Mr Reilly, their

best lodger, was in disgrace because Mrs Brooker said that he woke her up

when he came downstairs in the mornings. They couldn't, they complained

perpetually, get the kind of lodgers they wanted--good-class 'commercial

gentlemen' who paid full board and were out all day. Their ideal lodger

would have been somebody who paid thirty shillings a week and never came

indoors except to sleep. I have noticed that people who let lodgings nearly

always hate their lodgers. They want their money but they look on them as

intruders and have a curiously watchful, jealous attitude which at bottom

is a determination not to let the lodger make himself too much at home. It

is an inevitable result of the bad system by which the lodger has to live

in somebody else's house without being one of the family.

The meals at the Brookers' house were uniformly disgusting. For

breakfast you got two rashers of bacon and a pale fried egg, and bread-and-

butter which had often been cut overnight and always had thumb-marks on it.

However tactfully I tried, I could never induce Mr Brooker to let me cut my

own bread-and-butter; he would hand it to me slice by slice, each slice

gripped firmly under that broad black thumbs For dinner there were

generally those three penny steak puddings which are sold ready-made in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

tins--these were part of the stock of the shop, I think--and boiled

potatoes and rice pudding. For tea there was more bread-and-butter and

frayed-looking sweet cakes which were probably bought as 'stales' from the

baker. For supper there was the pale flabby Lancashire cheese and biscuits.

The Brookers never called these biscuits biscuits.

They always referred to

them reverently as 'cream crackers'--'Have another cream cracker, Mr Reilly.

You'll like a cream cracker with your cheese'--thus glozing over the fact

that there was only cheese for supper. Several bottles of Worcester Sauce

and a half-full jar of marmalade lived permanently on the table. It was $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

usual to souse everything, even a piece of cheese, with Worcester Sauce,

but I never saw anyone brave the marmalade jar, which was an unspeakable

mass of stickiness and dust. Mrs Brooker had her meals separately but also

took snacks from any meal that happened to be going, and manoeuvred with

great skill for what she called 'the bottom of the pot', meaning the

strongest cup of tea. She had a habit of constantly wiping her mouth on one

of her blankets. Towards the end of my stay she took to tearing off strips

of newspaper for this purpose, and in the morning the floor was often

littered with crumpled-up balls of slimy paper which lay there for hours.

The smell of the kitchen was dreadful, but, as with that of the bedroom,

you ceased to notice it after a while.

It struck me that this place must be fairly normal as lodging-houses

in the industrial areas go, for on the whole the lodgers did not complain.

The only one who ever did so to my knowledge was a little black-haired,

sharp-nosed Cockney, a traveller for a cigarette firm. He had never been in $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

the North before, and I think that till recently he had been in better

employ and was used to staying in commercial hotels. This was his first

glimpse of really low-class lodgings, the kind of place in which the poor

tribe of touts and canvassers have to shelter upon their endless journeys.

In the morning as we were dressing (he had slept in the double bed, of

course) I saw him look round the desolate room with a

sort of wondering

aversion. He caught my eye and suddenly divined that I was a fellow- $\,$

Southerner. 'The filthy bloody bastards!' he said feelingly. After that he

packed his suit-case, went downstairs and, with great strength of mind,

told the Brookers that this was not the kind of house he was accustomed to

and that he was leaving immediately. The Brookers could never understand

why. They were astonished and hurt. The ingratitude of it! Leaving them

like that for no reason after a single night! Afterwards they discussed it

over and over again, in all its bearings. It was added to their store of grievances.

On the day when there was a full chamber-pot under the breakfast table

I decided to leave. The place was beginning to depress me. It was not only

the dirt, the smells, and the vile food, but the feeling of stagnant

meaningless decay, of having got down into some subterranean place where

people go creeping round and round, just like blackbeetles, in an endless

muddle of slovened jobs and mean grievances. The most dreadful thing about

people like the Brookers is the way they say the same things over and over

again. It gives you the feeling that they are not real people at all, but a

kind of ghost for ever rehearsing the same futile rigmarole. In the end ${\tt Mrs}$

Brooker's self-pitying talk--always the same complaints, over and over,

and always ending with the tremulous whine of 'It does seem 'ard, don't it

now?'--revolted me even more than her habit of wiping her mouth with bits $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

of newspaper. But it is no use saying that people like the Brookers are

just disgusting and trying to put them out of mind.

For they exist in tens

and hundreds of thousands; they are one of the characteristic by-products

of the modern world. You cannot disregard them if you accept the

civilization that produced them. For this is part at least of what

industrialism has done for us. Columbus sailed the Atlantic, the first

steam engines tottered into motion, the British squares stood firm under

the French guns at Waterloo, the one-eyed scoundrels of the nineteenth $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{$

century praised God and filled their pockets; and this is where it all led

--to labyrinthine slums and dark back kitchens with sickly, ageing people

creeping round and round them like blackbeetles. It is a kind of duty to

see and smell such places now and again, especially smell them, lest you

should forget that they exist; though perhaps it is better not to stay there too long.

The train bore me away, through the monstrous scenery of slag-heaps,

chimneys, piled scrap-iron, foul canals, paths of cindery mud criss-crossed

by the prints of clogs. This was March, but the weather had been horribly

cold and everywhere there were mounds of blackened snow. As we moved slowly

through the outskirts of the town we passed row after row of little grey

slum houses running at right angles to

the-embankment. At the back of one

of the houses a young woman was kneeling on the stones, poking a stick up

the leaden waste-pipe which ran from the sink inside

and which I suppose

was blocked. I had time to see everything about her--her sacking apron,

her clumsy clogs, her arms reddened by the cold. She looked up as the train

passed, and I was almost near enough to catch her eye. She had a round pale

face, the usual exhausted face of the slum girl who is twenty-five and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

looks forty, thanks to miscarriages and drudgery; and it wore, for the

second in which I saw it, the most desolate, hopeless expression I have

ever-seen. It struck me then that we are mistaken when we say that' It

isn't the same for them as it would be for us,' and that people bred in the

slums can imagine nothing but the slums. For what I saw in her face was not $\,$

the ignorant suffering of an animal. She knew well enough what was

happening to her--understood as well as I did how dreadful a destiny it

was to be kneeling there in the bitter cold, on the slimy stones of a slum $\,$

backyard, poking a stick up a foul drain-pipe.

But quite soon the train drew away into open country, and that seemed

strange, almost unnatural, as though the open country had been a kind of

park; for in the industrial areas one always feels that the smoke and filth

must go on for ever and that no part of the earth's surface can escape

them. In a crowded, dirty little country like ours one takes defilement

almost for granted. Slag-heaps and chimneys seem a more normal, probable

landscape than grass and trees, and even in the depths of the country when $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

you drive your fork into the ground you half expect to lever up a broken

bottle or a rusty can. But out here the snow was untrodden and lay so deep

that only the tops of the stone boundary-walls were showing, winding over

the hills like black paths. I remembered that D. H. Lawrence, writing of

this same landscape or another near by, said that the snow-covered hills

rippled away into the distance 'like muscle'. It was not the simile that

would have occurred to me. To my eye the snow and the black walls were more

like a white dress with black piping running across it.

Although the snow was hardly broken the sun was shining brightly, and

behind the shut windows of the carriage it seemed warm. According to the

almanac this was spring, and a few of the birds seemed to believe it. For

the first time in my life, in a bare patch beside the line, I saw rooks

treading. They did it on the ground and not, as I should have expected, in

a tree. The manner of courtship was curious. The female stood with her beak

open and the male walked round her and appeared to be feeding her. I had

hardly been in the train half an hour, but it seemed a very long way from

the Brookers' back-kitchen to the empty slopes of snow, the bright $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

sunshine, and the big gleaming birds.

The whole of the industrial districts are really one enormous town, of

about the same population as Greater London but, fortunately, of much

larger area; so that even in the middle of them there is still room for

patches of cleanness and decency. That is an encouraging thought. In spite

of hard trying, man has not yet succeeded in doing his dirt everywhere. The earth is so vast and still so empty that even in the filthy heart of civilization you find fields where the grass is green instead of grey; perhaps if you looked for them you might even find streams with live fish in them instead of salmon tins. For quite a long time, perhaps another twenty minutes, the train was rolling through open country before the villa-civilization began to close in upon us again, and then the outer slums, and then the slag-heaps, belching chimneys, blast-furnaces, canals, and gaso-meters of another industrial town.

2

Our civilization, pace Chesterton, is founded on coal, more completely than one realizes until one stops to think about it. The machines that keep us alive, and the machines that make machines, are all directly or indirectly dependent upon coal. In the metabolism of the Western world the coal-miner is second in importance only to the man who ploughs the soil. He is a sort of caryatid upon whose shoulders nearly everything that is not grimy is supported. For this reason the actual process by which coal is extracted is well worth watching, if you get the chance and are willing to take the trouble.

When you go down a coal-mine it is important to try and get to the

coal face when the 'fillers' are at work. This is not easy, because when

the mine is working visitors are a nuisance and are not encouraged, but if

you go at any other time, it is possible to come away with a totally wrong

impression. On a Sunday, for instance, a mine seems almost peaceful. The

time to go there is when the machines are roaring and the air is black with

coal dust, and when you can actually see what the miners have to do. At

those times the place is like hell, or at any rate like my own mental

picture of hell. Most of the things one imagines in hell are if there--

heat, noise, confusion, darkness, foul air, and, above all, unbearably

cramped space. Everything except the fire, for there is no fire down there

except the feeble beams of Davy lamps and electric torches which scarcely $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

penetrate the clouds of coal dust.

When you have finally got there--and getting there is a in itself: I

will explain that in a moment--you crawl through the last line of pit

props and see opposite you a shiny black wall three or four feet high. This

is the coal face. Overhead is the smooth ceiling made by the rock from $\,$

which the coal has been cut; underneath is the rock again, so that the

gallery you are in is only as high as the ledge of coal itself, probably

not much more than a yard. The first impression of all, overmastering

everything else for a while, is the frightful, deafening din from the

conveyor belt which carries the coal away. You cannot

see very far, because

the fog of coal dust throws back the beam of your lamp, but you can see on

either side of you the line of half-naked kneeling men, one to every four

or five yards, driving their shovels under the fallen coal and flinging it

swiftly over their left shoulders. They are feeding it on to the conveyor

belt, a moving rubber, belt a couple of feet wide which runs a yard or two

behind them. Down this belt a glittering river of coal races constantly. In

a big mine it is carrying away several tons of coal every minute. It bears

it off to some place in the main roads where it is shot into tubs holding

half a tun, and thence dragged to the cages and hoisted to the outer air .

It is impossible to watch the 'fillers' at work without feelling a

pang of envy for their toughness. It is a dreadful job that they do, an

almost superhuman job by the standard of an ordinary person. For they are

not only shifting monstrous quantities of coal, they are also doing, it in

a position that doubles or trebles the work. They have got to remain

kneeling all the while--they could hardly rise from their knees without

hitting the ceiling--and you can easily see by trying it what a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

tremendous effort this means. Shovelling is comparatively easy when you are

standing up, because you can use your knee and thigh to drive the shovel

along; kneeling down, the whole of the strain is thrown upon your arm and

belly muscles. And the other conditions do not exactly make things easier.

There is the heat--it varies, but in some mines it is

suffocating--and

the coal dust that stuffs up your throat and nostrils and collects along

your eyelids, and the unending rattle of the conveyor belt, which in that

confined space is rather like the rattle of a machine gun. But the fillers

look and work as though they were made of iron. They really do look like

iron hammered iron statues--under the smooth coat of coal dust which

clings to them from head to foot. It is only when you see miners down the

mine and naked that you realize what splendid men, they are. Most of them

are small (big men are at a disadvantage in that job) but nearly all of

them have the most noble bodies; wide shoulders tapering to slender supple

waists, and small pronounced buttocks and sinewy thighs, with not an ounce

of waste flesh anywhere. In the hotter mines they wear only a pair of thin

drawers, clogs and knee-pads; in the hottest mines of all, only the clogs

and knee-pads. You can hardly tell by the look of them whether they are

young or old. They may be any age up to sixty or even sixty-five, but when $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

they are black and naked they all look alike. No one could do their work

who had not a young man's body, and a figure fit for a guardsman at that,

just a few pounds of extra flesh on the waist-line, and the constant

bending would be impossible. You can never forget that spectacle once you

have seen it--the line of bowed, kneeling figures, sooty black all over,

driving their, huge shovels under the coal with stupendous force and speed.

They are on the job for seven and a half hours, theoretically without a

break, for there is no time 'off'. Actually they, snatch a quarter of an

hour or so at some time during the shift to eat the food they have brought

with them, usually a hunk of bread and dripping and a bottle of cold tea.

The first time I was watching the 'fillers' at work I put my hand upon some

dreadful slimy thing among the coal dust. It was a chewed guid of tobacco.

Nearly all the miners chew tobacco, which is said to be good against thirst.

Probably you have to go down several coal-mines before you can get

much grasp of the processes that are going on round you. This is chiefly

because the mere effort of getting from place to place; makes it difficult

to notice anything else, In some ways it is even disappointing, or at least

is unlike what you have, expected. You get into the cage, which is a steel

box about as wide as a telephone box and two or three times as long. It

holds ten men, but they pack it like pilchards in a tin, and a tall man

cannot stand upright in it. The steel door shuts upon you, and somebody

working the winding gear above drops you into the void. You have the usual

momentary qualm in your belly and a bursting sensation in the cars, but not

much sensation of movement till you get near the bottom, when the cage

slows down so abruptly that you could swear it is going upwards again. In

the middle of the run the cage probably touches sixty miles an hour; in

some of the deeper mines it touches even more. When you crawl out at the $\,$

bottom you are perhaps four hundred yards

underground. That is to say you

have a tolerable-sized mountain on top of you;

hundreds of yards of solid

rock, bones of extinct beasts, subsoil, flints, roots
of growing things,

green grass and cows grazing on it--all this suspended over your head and

held back only by wooden props as thick as the calf of your leg. But

because of the speed at which the cage has brought you down, and the

complete blackness through which you have travelled, you hardly feel

yourself deeper down than you would at the bottom of the Piccadilly tube.

What is surprising, on the other hand, is the immense horizontal

distances that have to be travelled underground.

Before I had been down a

mine I had vaguely imagined the miner stepping out of the cage and getting

to work on a ledge of coal a few yards away. I had not realized that before

he even gets to work he may have had to creep along passages as long as

from London Bridge to Oxford Circus. In the beginning, of course, a mine

shaft is sunk somewhere near a seam of coal; But as that seam is worked out

and fresh seams are followed up, the workings get further and further from

the pit bottom. If it is a mile from the pit bottom to the coal face, that

is probably an average distance; three miles is a fairly normal one; there

are even said to be a few mines where it is as much as five miles. But

these distances bear no relation to distances above ground. For in all that

mile or three miles as it may be, there is hardly anywhere outside the main

road, and not many places even there, where a man can

stand upright.

You do not notice the effect of this till you have gone a few hundred

yards. You start off, stooping slightly, down the dim-lit gallery, eight or

ten feet wide and about five high, with the walls built up with slabs of

shale, like the stone walls in Derbyshire. Every yard or two there are

wooden props holding up the beams and girders; some of the girders have

buckled into fantastic curves under which you have to duck. Usually it is

bad going underfoot--thick dust or jagged chunks of shale, and in some

mines where there is water it is as mucky as a farm-yard. Also there is the

track for the coal tubs, like a miniature railway track with sleepers a

foot or two apart, which is tiresome to walk on.

Everything is grey with

shale dust; there is a dusty fiery smell which seems to be the same in all

mines. You see mysterious machines of which you never learn the purpose,

and bundles of tools slung together on wires, and sometimes mice darting

away from the beam of the lamps. They are surprisingly common, especially

in mines where there are or have been horses. It would be interesting to

know how they got there in the first place; possibly by falling down the

shaft--for they say a mouse can fall any distance uninjured, owing to its

surface area being so large relative to its weight. You press yourself

against the wall to make way for lines of tubs jolting slowly towards the

shaft, drawn by an endless steel cable operated from the surface. You creep

through sacking curtains and thick wooden doors

which, when they are opened, let out fierce blasts of air. These doors are an important part of the ventilation system. The exhausted air is sucked out of one shaft by means of fans, and the fresh air enters the other of its own accord. But if left to itself the air will take the shortest way round, leaving the deeper workings unventilated; so all the short cuts have to be partitioned off.

At the start to walk stooping is rather a joke, but it is a joke that soon wears off. I am handicapped by being exceptionally tall, but when the roof falls to four feet or less it is a tough job for anybody except a dwarf or a child. You not only have to bend double, you have also got to keep your head up all the while so as to see the beams and girders and dodge them when they come. You have, thehefore, a constant crick in the neck, but this is nothing to the pain in your knees and thighs. After half a mile it becomes (I am not exaggerating) an unbearable agony. You begin to wonder whether you will ever get to the end--still more, how on earth you are going to get back. Your pace grows slower and slower. You come to a stretch of a couple of hundred yards where it is all exceptionally low and you have to work yourself along in a squatting position. Then suddenly the roof opens out to a mysterious height--scene of and old fall of rock, probably--and for twenty whole yards you can stand upright. The relief is overwhelming. But after this there is another low stretch of a hundred

yards and then a succession of beams which you have

to crawl under. You go

down on all fours; even this is a relief after the squatting business. But

when you come to the end of the beams and try to get up again, you find

that your knees have temporarily struck work and refuse to lift you. You

call a halt, ignominiously, and say that you would like to rest for a $\,$

minute or two. Your guide (a miner) is sympathetic. He knows that your

muscles are not the same as his. 'Only another four hundred yards,' he says

encouragingly; you feel that he might as well say another four hundred

miles. But finally you do somehow creep as far as the coal face. You have

gone a mile and taken the best part of an hour; a miner would do it in not

much more than twenty minutes. Having got there, you have to sprawl in the

coal dust and get your strength back for several minutes before you can

even watch the work in progress with any kind of intelligence.

Coming back is worse than going, not only because you are already

tired out but because the journey back to the shaft is slightly uphill. You

get through the low places at the speed of a tortoise, and you have no

shame now about calling a halt when your knees give way. Even the lamp you

are carrying becomes a nuisance and probably when you stumble you drop it;

whereupon, if it is a Davy lamp, it goes out. Ducking the beams becomes

more and more of an effort, and sometimes you forget to duck. You try

walking head down as the miners do, and then you bang your backbone. Even $\,$

the miners bang their backbones fairly often. This is

the reason why in

very hot mines, where it is necessary to go about half naked, most of the

miners have what they call 'buttons down the back'--that is, a permanent

scab on each vertebra. When the track is down hill the miners sometimes fit

their clogs, which are hollow under-neath, on to the trolley rails and

slide down. In mines where the 'travelling' is very bad all the miners

carry sticks about two and a half feet long, hollowed out below the handle.

In normal places you keep your hand on top of the stick and in the low $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

places you slide your hand down into the hollow.

These sticks are a great help, and the wooden crash-helmets--a comparatively

recent invention-

are a godsend. They look like a French or Italian steel helmet, but they $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

are made of some kind of pith and very light, and so strong, that you can

take a violent blow on the head without feeling it. When finally you get

back to the surface you have been perhaps three hours $underground\ and$

travelled two miles, and you, are more exhausted than you would be by a

twenty-five-mile walk above ground. For a week afterwards your thighs are

so stiff that coming downstairs is quite a difficult feat; you have to work

your way down in a peculiar sidelong manner, without bending the knees.

Your miner friends notice the stiffness of your walk and chaff you about

it. ('How'd ta like to work down pit, eh?' etc.) Yet even a miner who has

been long away front work--from illness, for instance--when he comes

back to the pit, suffers badly for the first few days.

It may seem that I am exaggerating, though no one who has been down an $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

old-fashioned pit (most of the pits in England are old-fashioned) and $\,$

actually gone as far as the coal face, is likely to say so. But what I want $\;$

to emphasize is this. Here is this frightful business of crawling to and

fro, which to any normal person is a hard day's work in itself; and it is

not part of the miner's work at all, it is merely an extra, like the City

man's daily ride in the Tube. The miner does that journey to and fro, and

sandwiched in between there are seven and a half hours of savage work. I

have never travelled much more than a mile to the coal face; but often it

is three miles, in which case I and most people other than coal-miners

would never get there at all. This is the kind of point that one is always

liable to miss. When you think of the coal-mine you think of depth, heat,

darkness, blackened figures hacking at walls of coal; you don't think,

necessarily, of those miles of creeping to and fro. There is the question

of time, also. A miner's working shift of seven and a half hours does not

sound very long, but one has got to add on to it at least an hour a day for

'travelling', more often two hours and sometimes three. Of course, the

'travelling' is not technically work and the miner is not paid for it; but

it is as like work as makes no difference. It is easy to say that miners $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

don't mind all this. Certainly, it is not the same for them as it would be

for you or me. They have done it since childhood, they have the right $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

muscles hardened, and they can move to and fro

underground with a startling

and rather horrible agility. A miner puts his head down and runs, with a

long swinging stride, through places where $\ensuremath{\text{I}}$ can only stagger. At the

workings you see them on all fours, skipping round the pit props almost

like dogs. But it is quite a mistake to think that they enjoy it. I have

talked about this to scores of miners and they all admit that the

'travelling' is hard work; in any case when you hear them discussing a pit

among themselves the 'travelling' is always one of the things they discuss.

It is said that a shift always returns from work faster than it goes;

nevertheless the miners all say that it is the coming away after a hard

day's work, that is especially irksome. It is part of their work and they

are equal to it, but certainly it is an effort. It is comparable, perhaps,

to climbing a smallish mountain before and after your day's work.

When you have been down in two or three pits you begin to get some

grasp of the processes that are going on underground. (I ought to say, by

the way, that I know nothing whatever about the technical side of mining: I

am merely describing what I have seen.) Coal lies in thin seams between $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

enormous layers of rock, so that essentially the process of getting it out

is like scooping the central layer from a Neapolitan ice. In the old days

the miners used to cut straight into the coal with pick and crowbar--a

very slow job because coal, when lying in its virgin state, is almost as

hard as rock. Nowadays the preliminary work is done

by an electrically-

driven coal-cutter, which in principle is an immensely tough and powerful

band-saw, running horizontally instead of vertically, with teeth a couple

of inches long and half an inch or an inch thick. It can move backwards or

forwards on its own power, and the men operating it can rotate it this way

or that. Incidentally it makes one of the most awful noises I have ever

heard, and sends forth clouds of coal dust which make it impossible to see

more than two to three feet and almost impossible to breathe. The machine

travels along the coal face cutting into the base of the coal and

undermining it to the depth of five feet or five feet and a half; after

this it is comparatively easy to extract the coal to the depth to which it

has been undermined. Where it is 'difficult getting', however, it has also

to be loosened with explosives. A man with an electric drill, like a rather

small version of the drills used in street-mending, bores holes at

intervals in the coal, inserts blasting powder, plugs it with clay, goes $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,2,\ldots \right\} =0$

round the corner if there is one handy (he is supposed to retire to twenty-

five yards distance) and touches off the charge with an electric current.

This is not intended to bring the coal out, only to loosen it.

Occasionally, of course, the charge is too powerful, and then it not only

brings the coal out but brings the roof down as well.

After the blasting has been done the 'fillers' can tumble the coal

out, break it up and shovel it on to the conveyor belt. It comes out first

in monstrous boulders which may weigh anything up to twenty tons. The $\,$

conveyor belt shoots it on to tubs, and the tubs are shoved into the main

road and hitched on to an endlessly revolving steel cable which drags them

to the cage. Then they are hoisted, and at the surface the coal is sorted $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\} =$

by being run over screens, and if necessary is washed as well. As far as

possible the 'dirt'--the shale, that is--is used for making the roads

below. All what cannot be used is sent to the surface and dumped; hence the

monstrous 'dirt-heaps', like hideous grey mountains, which are the

characteristic scenery of the coal areas. When the coal has been extracted

to the depth to which the machine has cut, the coal face has advanced by

five feet. Fresh props are put in to hold up the newly exposed roof, and

during the next shift the conveyor belt is taken to pieces, moved five feet

forward and re-assembled. As far as possible the three operations of $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right$

cutting, blasting and extraction are done in three separate shifts, the

cutting in the afternoon, the blasting at night (there is a law, not always

kept, that forbids its being done when other men are working near by), and

the 'filling' in the morning shift, which lasts from six in the morning until half past one.

Even when you watch the process of coal-extraction you probably only

watch it for a short time, and it is not until you begin making a few

calculations that you realize what a stupendous task the 'fillers' are

performing. Normally each o man has to clear a space

four or five yards

wide. The cutter has undermined the coal to the depth of five feet, so that

if the seam of coal is three or four feet high, each man has to cut out,

break up and load on to the belt something between seven and twelve cubic

yards of coal. This is to say, taking a cubic yard as weighing twenty-seven

hundred-weight, that each man is shifting coal at a speed approaching two

tons an hour. I have just enough experience of pick and shovel work to be

able to grasp what this means. When I am digging trenches in my garden, if

I shift two tons of earth during the afternoon, I feel that I have earned

 $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ tea. But earth is tractable stuff compared with coal, and I don't have

to work kneeling down, a thousand feet underground, in suffocating heat and

swallowing coal dust with every breath I take; nor do I have to walk a mile $\,$

bent double before I begin. The miner's job would be as much beyond my

power as it would be to perform on a flying trapeze or to win the Grand

National. I am not a manual labourer and please God I never shall be one,

but there are some kinds of manual work that I could do if I had to. At a $\,$

pitch I could be a tolerable road-sweeper or an inefficient gardener or

even a tenth-rate farm hand. But by no conceivable amount of effort or

training could I become a coal-miner, the work would kill me in a few weeks.

Watching coal-miners at work, you realize momentarily what different $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

universes people inhabit. Down there where coal is dug is a sort of world

apart which one can quite easily go through life without ever hearing

about. Probably majority of people would even prefer not to hear about it.

Yet it is the absolutely necessary counterpart of our world above.

Practically everything we do, from eating an ice to crossing the Atlantic,

and from baking a loaf to writing a novel, involves the use of coal,

directly or indirectly. For all the arts of peace coal is needed; if war

breaks out it is needed all the more. In time of revolution the miner must

go on working or the revolution must stop, for revolution as much as $\ensuremath{\mathsf{must}}$

reaction needs coal. Whatever may be happening on the surface, the hacking

and shovelling have got to continue without a pause, or at any rate without

pausing for more than a few weeks at the most. In order that Hitler may

march the goose-step, that the Pope may denounce Bolshevism, that the

cricket crowds may assemble at Lords, that the poets may scratch one

another's backs, coal has got to be forthcoming. But on the whole we are

not aware of it; we all know that we 'must have coal', but we seldom or

never remember what coal-getting involves. Here am I sitting writing in

front of my comfortable coal fire. It is April but I still need a fire.

Once a fortnight the coal cart drives up to the door and men in leather

jerkins carry the coal indoors in stout sacks smelling of tar and shoot it

clanking into the coal-hole under the stairs. It is only very rarely, when

I make a definite mental-effort, that I connect this coal with that far-off

labour in the mines. It is just 'coal'--something

that I have got to

have; black stuff that arrives mysteriously from nowhere in particular,

like manna except that you have to pay for it. You could quite easily drive

a car right across the north of England and never once remember that

hundreds of feet below the road you are on the miners are hacking at the

coal. Yet in a sense it is the miners who are driving your car forward.

Their lamp-lit world down there is as necessary to the daylight world above as the root is to the flower.

It is not long since conditions in the mines were worse than they are

now. There are still living a few very old women who in their youth have

worked underground, with the harness round their waists, and a chain that

passed between their legs, crawling on all fours and dragging tubs of coal.

They used to go on doing this even when they were pregnant. And even now,

if coal could not be produced without pregnant women dragging it to and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

fro, I fancy we should let them do it rather than deprive ourselves of

coal. But-most of the time, of course, we should prefer to forget that they

were doing it. It is so with all types of manual work; it keeps us alive,

and we are oblivious of its existence. More than anyone else, perhaps, the

miner can stand as the type of the manual worker, not only because his work $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

is so exaggeratedly awful, but also because it is so vitally necessary and

yet so remote from our experience, so invisible, as it were, that we are

capable of forgetting it as we forget the blood in our veins. In a way it

is even humiliating to watch coal-miners working. It raises in you a momentary doubt about your own status as an 'intellectual' and a superior person generally. For it is brought home to you, at least while you are watching, that it is only because miners sweat their guts out that superior persons can remain superior. You and I and the editor of the Times Lit. Supp., and the poets and the Archbishop of Canterbury and Comrade X, author of Marxism for Infants--all of us really owe the comparative decency of our lives to poor drudges underground, blackened to the eyes, with their throats full of coal dust, driving their shovels

3

forward with arms and belly muscles of steel.

When the miner comes up from the pit his face is so pale that it is noticeable even through the mask of coal dust. This is due to the foul air that he has been breathing, and will wear off presently. To a Southerner, new to the mining districts, the spectacle of a shift of several hundred miners streaming out of the pit is strange and slightly sinister. Thenexhausted faces, with the grime clinging in all the hollows, have a fierce, wild look. At other times, when their faces are clean, there is not much to distinguish them from the rest of the population. They have a very upright square-shouldered walk, a reaction from the constant bending underground,

but most of them are shortish men and their thick ill-fitting clothes hide

the splendour of their bodies. The most definitely distinctive thing about

them is the blue scars on their noses. Every miner has blue scars on his

nose and forehead, and will carry them to his death. The coal dust of which

the air underground is full enters every cut, and then the skin grows over

it and forms a blue stain like tattooing, which in fact it is. Some of the $\,$

older men have their foreheads veined like Roquefort cheeses from this cause.

As soon as the miner comes above ground he gargles a little water to

get the worst of the coal dust out of his throat and nostrils, and then

goes home and either washes or does not wash according to his temperament.

From what I have seen I should say that a majority of miners prefer to eat

their meal first and wash afterwards, as I should do in their

circumstances. It is the normal thing to see a miner sitting down to his

tea with a Christy-minstrel face, completely black except for very red lips

which become clean by eating. After his meal he takes a largish basin of

water and washes very methodically, first his hands, then his chest, neck,

and armpits, then his forearms, then his face and scalp (it is on the scalp

that the grime clings thickest), and then his wife takes the flannel and

washes his back. He has only washed the top half of his body and probably

his navel is still a nest of coal dust, but even so it takes some skill to

get pass-ably clean in a single basin of water. For

my own part I found I
needed two complete baths after going down a
coal-mine. Getting the dirt
out of one's eyelids is a ten minutes' job in itself.

At some of the larger and better appointed collieries there are

pithead baths. This is an enormous advantage, for not only can the miner $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

wash himself all over every day, in comfort and even luxury, but at the

baths he has two lockers where he can keep his pit clothes separate from

his day clothes, so that within twenty minutes of emerging as black as a

Negro he can be riding off to a football match dressed up to the nines. But

it is only comparatively seldom because a seam of coal does not last for

ever, so that it is not necessarily worth building a bath every time a

shaft is sunk. I can-not get hold of exact figures, but it seems likely

that rather less than one miner in three has access to a pithead bath.

Probably a large majority of miners are completely black from the waist

down for at least six days a week. It is almost impossible for them to wash

all over in their own homes. Every drop of water has got to be heated up,

and in a tiny living-room which contains, apart from the kitchen range and

a quantity of furniture, a wife, some children, and probably a dog, there

is simply not room to have a proper bath. Even with a basin one is bound to

splash the furniture. Middle-class people are fond of saying that the

miners would not wash themselves properly even if they could, but this is

nonsense, as is shown by the fact that where pithead baths exist

practically all the men use them. Only among the very old men does the

belief still linger that washing one's legs 'causes lumbago'. Moreover the

pithead baths, where they exist, are paid for wholly or partly by the

miners themselves, out of the Miners' Welfare Fund. Sometimes the colliery

company subscribes, some-times the Fund bears the whole cost. But doubtless

even at this late date the old ladies in Brighton boarding-houses are

saying that 'if you give those miners baths they only use them to keep coal in'.

As a matter of fact it is surprising that miners wash as regularly as

they do, seeing how little time they have between work and sleep. It is a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

great mistake to think of a miner's working day as being only seven and a

half hours. Seven and a half hours is the time spent actually on the job,

but, as I have already explained, one has got to add on to this time taken

up in 'travelling', which is seldom less than an hour and may often be

three hours. In addition most miners have to spend a considerable time in

getting to and from the pit. Throughout the industrial districts there is

an acute shortage of houses, and it is only in the small mining villages,

where the village is grouped round the pit, that the men can be certain of

living near their work. In the larger mining towns where I have stayed,

nearly everyone went to work by bus; half a crown a week seemed to be the

normal amount to spend on fares. One miner I stayed with was working on the $\,$

morning shift, which was from six in the morning till

half past one. He had

to be out of bed at a quarter to four and got back somewhere after three in

the afternoon. In another house where I stayed a boy of fifteen was working

on the night shift. He left for work at nine at night and got back at eight

in the morning, had his breakfast, and then promptly went to bed and slept

till six in the evening; so that his leisure time amounted to, about four

hours a day--actually a good deal less, if you take off the time for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

washing, eating, and dressing.

The adjustments a miner's family have to make when he is changed from

one shift to another must be tiresome in the extreme. If he is on the night

shift he gets home in time for breakfast, on the morning shift he gets home

in the middle of the afternoon, and on the afternoon shift he gets home in

the middle of the night; and in each case, of course, he wants his

principal meal of the day as soon as he returns. I notice that the Rev. $\mbox{W}.$

R. Inge, in his book England, accuses the miners of gluttony. From my own

observation I should say that they eat astonishingly little. Most of the $\,$

miners I stayed with ate slightly less than I did. Many of them declare

that they cannot do their day's work if they have had a heavy meal

beforehand, and the food they take with them is only a snack, usually

bread-and-dripping and cold tea. They carry it in a flat tin called a snap-

can which they strap to their belts. When a miner gets back late at night

his wife waits up for him, but when he is on the morning shift it seems to

be the custom for him to get his breakfast for himself. Apparently the old superstition that it is bad luck to see a woman before going to work on the morning shift is not quite extinct. In the old days, it is said, a miner who happened to meet a woman in the early morning would often turn back and do no work that day.

Before I had been in the coal areas I shared the wide-spread illusion

that miners are comparatively well paid. One hears it loosely stated that a

miner is paid ten or eleven shillings a shift, and one does a small

multiplication sum and concludes that every miner is earning round about ${\tt L2}$

a week or L150 a year. But the statement that a miner receives ten or $\ensuremath{\text{\text{c}}}$

eleven shillings a shift is very misleading. To begin with, it is only the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

actual coal 'getter' who is paid at this rate; a 'dataller', for instance,

who attends to the roofing, is paid at a lower rate, usually eight or nine

shillings a shift. Again, when the coal 'getter' is paid piecework, so much

per ton extracted, as is the case in many mines, he is dependent on the

quality of the coal; a breakdown in the machinery or a 'fault'--that is,

a streak of rock running through the coal seam--may rob him of his

earnings for a day or two at a time. But in any case one ought not to think

of the miner as working six days a week, fifty-two weeks a year. Almost

certainly there will be a number of days when he is' laid off'. The average

earning per shift worked for every mine-worker, of all ages and both sexes,

in Great Britain in 1934, was 9s. 1 3/4d. [From the

Colliery Tear Book and Coal Trades Directory for 1935.] If everyone were in work all the time, this would mean that the mine-worker was earning a little over L142 a year, or nearly L2 15s. a week. His real income, however, is far lower than this, for the 9s. 1 3/4d. is merely an average calculation on shifts actually worked and takes no account of blank days.

I have before me five pay-checks belonging to a Yorkshire miner, for five weeks (not consecutive) at the beginning of 1936. Averaging them up, the gross weekly wages they represent is L2 15s. 2d.; this is an average of nearly 9s. 2 1/2d. a shift. But these pay-checks are for the winter, when nearly all mines are running full time. As spring advances the coal trade slacks off and more and more men are 'temporarily stopped', while others still technically in work are laid off for a day or two in every week. It is obvious therefore that L150 or even L142 is an immense over-estimate for the mine-worker's yearly income. As a matter of fact, for the year 1934 the average gross earnings of all miners through-out Great Britain was only L115 11s. 6d. It varied consider-ably from district to district, rising as high as L133 2s. 8d. in Scotland, while in Durham it was a little under L105 or barely more than L2 a week. I take these figures from The Coid Scuttle, by Mr Joseph Jones, Mayor of Barnsley, Yorkshire. Mr Jones adds:

These figures cover the earnings of youths as well as adults and of the higher- as well as the lower-paid grades... any

particularly high earning would be included in these figures, as would the earnings of certain officials and other higher-paid men as well as the higher amounts paid for overtime work.

The figures, being averages, fail... to reveal the position of thousands of adult workers whose earnings were substantially below the average and' who received only 30s. to 40s. or less per week.

Mr Jones's italics. But please notice that even these wretched earnings are gross earnings. On top of this there are all kinds of stoppages which are deducted from the miner's wages every week. Here is a list of weekly stoppages which was given me as typical in one Lancashire district:

	s.	d.
Insurance (unemployment and health) Hire of lamp	1	5 6
For sharpening tools		6
Check-weighman		9
Infirmary		2
Hospital		1
Benevolent Fund		6
Union fees		6
		-
Total	4	5
		_

Some of these stoppages, such as the Benevolent Fund and the union fees, are, so to speak, the miner's own responsibility, others are imposed by the colliery company. They are not the same in all

districts. For

instance, the iniquitous swindle of making the miner pay for the hire of

his lamp (at sixpence a week he buys the lamp several times over in a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

single year) does not obtain everywhere. But the stoppages always seem to

total up to about the same amount. On the Yorkshire miner's five pay-

checks, the average gross earning per week is L2 15s. 2d.; the average net

earning, after the stoppages have come off, is only L2 11s. 4d.--a

reduction of 3s. 10d. a week. But the pay-check, naturally, only mentions

stoppages which are imposed or paid through the colliery company; one has

got to add the union fees, bringing the total reduction up to something

over four shillings. Probably it is safe to say that stoppages of one kind

and another cut four shillings or thereabouts from every adult miner's

weekly wage. So that the L115 11s. 6d. which was the mine-worker's average

earning throughout Great Britain in 1934 should really be something nearer

L105. As against this, most miners receive allowances in kind, being able

to purchase coal for their own use at a reduced rate, usually eight or nine

shillings a ton. But according to Mr Jones, quoted above, 'the average

value of all allowances in kind for the country as a whole is only

fourpence a day'. And this fourpence a day is offset, in many cases, by the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

amount the miner has to spend on fares in getting to and from the pit. So,

taking the industry as a whole, the sum the miner can actually bring home

and call his own does not average more, perhaps slightly less, than two $\,$

pounds a week.

Meanwhile, how much coal is the average miner producing?

The tonnage of coal raised yearly per person employed in mining rises

steadily though rather slowly. In 1914 every mine-worker produced, on

average, 253 tons of coal; in 1934 he produced 280 tons.[The Coal Scuttle.

The Colliery Yew Book end Coal Trades Directory gives a slightly higher

figure.] This of course is an average figure for mine-workers of all

kinds; those actually working at the coal face extract an enormously

greater amount—in many cases, probably, well over a thousand tons each.

But taking 280 tons as a representative figure, it is worth noticing what

a vast achievement this is. One gets the best idea of it by comparing

a miner's life with somebody else's. If I live to be sixty I shall

probably have produced thirty novels, or enough to fill two medium-sized

library shelves. In the same period the average miner produces 8400 tons

of coal; enough coal to pave Trafalgar Square nearly two feet deep or to

supply seven large families with fuel for over a hundred years.

Of the five pay-checks I mentioned above, no less than three are

rubber-stamped with the words 'death stoppage'. When a miner is killed at

work it is usual for the other miners to make up a subscription, generally

of a shilling each, for his widow, and this is collected by the colliery

company and automatically deducted from their wages.

The significant detail

here is the rubber stamp. The rate of accidents among miners is so high,

compared with that in other trades, that casualties are taken for granted

almost as they would be in a minor war. Every year one miner in about nine

hundred is killed and one in about six is injured; most of these injuries,

of course, are petty ones, but a fair number amount to total disablement.

This means that if a miner's working life is forty years the chances are

nearly seven to one against his escaping injury and not much more than

twenty to one against his being killed outright. No other trade approaches

this in dangerousness; the next most dangerous is the shipping trade, one

sailor in a little under 1300 being killed every year. The figures I have

given apply, of course, to mine-workers as a whole; for those actually

working underground the proportion of injuries would be very much higher.

Every miner of long standing that I have talked to had either been in a

fairly serious accident himself or had seen some of his mates killed, and

in every mining family they tell you tales of fathers, brothers, or uncles

killed at work. ('And he fell seven hundred feet, and they wouldn't never

have collected t'pieces only he were wearing a new suit of oil-skins,'

etc., etc., etc.) Some of these tales are appalling in the extreme. One $\,$

miner, for instance, described to me how a mate of his, a 'dataller', was

buried by a fall of rock. They rushed to him and managed to uncover his

head and shoulders so that he could breathe, and he was alive and spoke to

them. Then they saw that the roof was coming down again and had to run to

save themselves; the 'dataller' was buried a second time. Once again they

rushed to him and got his head and shoulders free, and again he was alive

and spoke to them. Then the roof came down a third time, and this time they

could not uncover him for several hours, after which, of course, he was

dead. But the miner who told me the story (he had been buried himself on $\,$

one occasion, but he was lucky enough to have his head jammed between his

legs so that there was a small space in which he could breathe) did not

think it was a particularly appalling one. Its significance, for him, was

that the 'dataller' had known perfectly well that the place where he was

working was unsafe, and had gone there in daily expectation of an accident.

'And it worked on his mind to that extent that he got to kissing his wife

before he went to work. And she told me afterwards that it were over twenty years since he'd kissed her.'

The most obviously understandable cause of accidents is explosions of

gas, which is always more or less present in the atmosphere of the pit.

There is a special lamp which is used to test the air for gas, and when it

is present in at all large quantities it can be detected by the flame of an

ordinary Davy lamp burning blue. If the wick can be turned up to its full

extent and the flame is still blue, the proportion of gas is dangerously $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,2,\ldots \right\}$

high; it is, nevertheless, difficult to detect, because it does not

distribute itself evenly throughout the atmosphere

but hangs about in

cracks and crevices. Before starting work a miner often tests for gas by

poking his lamp into all the corners. The gas may be touched off by a spark

during blasting operations, or by a pick striking a spark from a stone, or

by a defective lamp, or by 'gob fires'--spontaneously generated fires

which' smoulder in the coal dust and are very hard to put out. The great

mining disasters which happen from time to time, in which several hundred

men are killed, are usually caused by explosions; hence one tends to think

of explosions as the chief danger of mining.

Actually, the great majority

of accidents are due to the normal every-day dangers of the pit; in

particular, to falls of roof. There are, for instance, 'pot-holes'--

circular holes from which a lump of stone big enough to kill a man shoots

out with the promptitude of a bullet. With, so far as I can remember, only

one exception, all the miners $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$ have talked to declared that the new

machinery, and 'speeding up' generally, have made the work more dangerous.

This may be partly due to conservatism, but they can give plenty of

reasons. To begin with, the speed at which the coal is now extracted means

that for hours at a time a dangerously large stretch of roof remains $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

unpropped. Then there is the vibration, which tends to shake everything

loose, and the noise, which makes it harder to detect signs of danger. One

must remember that a miner's safety underground depend largely on his own

care and skill. An experienced miner claims to know by a sort of instinct $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

when the roof is unsafe; the way he puts it is that he 'can feel the weight

on him'. He can, for instance, hear the faint creaking of the props. The

reason why wooden props are still generally preferred to iron girders is

that a wooden prop which is about to collapse gives warning by creaking,

whereas a girder flies out un-expectedly. The devastating noise of the

machines makes it impossible to hear anything else, and thus the danger is increased.

When a miner is hurt it is of course impossible to attend to $\ensuremath{\mathsf{him}}$

immediately. He lies crushed under several

hundred-weight of stone in some

dreadful cranny underground, and even after he has been extricated it is

necessary to drag his body a mile or more, perhaps, through galleries where

nobody can stand upright. Usually when you talk to a $\mbox{\sc man}$ who has been

injured you find that it was a couple of hours or so before they got him to

the surface. Sometimes, of course, there are accidents to the cage. The

cage is shooting several yards up or down at the speed of an express train,

and it is operated by somebody on the surface who cannot see what is

happening. He has very delicate indicators to tell him how far the cage has

got, but it is possible for him to make a mistake, and there have been

cases of the cage crashing into the pit-bottom at its very maximum speed.

This seems to me a dreadful way to die. For as that tiny steel box whizzes

through the blackness there must come a moment when the ten men who are $\,$

locked inside it know that something has gone wrong;

and the remaining seconds before they are smashed to pieces hardly bear thinking about. A miner told me he was once in a cage in which something went wrong. It did not slow up when it should have done, and they thought the cable must have snapped. As it happened they got to the bottom safely, but when he stepped out he found that he had broken a tooth; he had been

Apart from accidents miners seem to be healthy, as obviously they have

hard in expectation of that frightful crash.

got to be, considering the muscular efforts demanded of them. They are

liable to rheumatism and a man with defective lungs does not last long in

that dust-impregnated air, but the most

characteristic industrial disease

clenching his teeth so

is nystagmus. This is a disease of the eyes which makes the eyeballs $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

oscillate in a strange manner when they come near a light. It is due

presumably to working in half-darkness, and sometimes results in total $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

blindness. Miners who are disabled in this way or any other way are

compensated by the colliery company, sometimes with a lump sum, sometimes

with a weekly pension. This pension never amounts to more than twenty-nine

shillings a week; if it falls below fifteen shillings the disabled man can

also get something from the dole or the P.A.C. If I were a disabled miner $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

should very much prefer the lump sum, for then at any rate I should know $\,$

that I had got my money. Disability pensions are not guaranteed by any $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

centralized fund, so that if the colliery company goes bankrupt that is the $\,$

end of the disabled miner's pension, though he does figure among the other creditors.

In Wigan I stayed for a while with a miner who was suffering from

nystagmus. He could see across the room but not much further. He had been

drawing compensation of twenty-nine shillings a week for the past nine

months, but the colliery company were now talking of putting him on

'partial compensation' of fourteen shillings a week. It all depended on

whether the doctor passed him as fit for light work 'on top'. Even if the

doctor did pass him there would, needless to say, be no light work

available, but he could draw the dole and the company would have saved

itself fifteen shillings a week. Watching this man go to the colliery to

draw his compensation, I was struck by the profound differences that are $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

still made by status. Here was a man who had been half blinded in one of

the most useful of all jobs and was drawing a pension to which he had a

perfect right, if anybody has a right to anything.

Yet he could not, so to

speak, demand this pension--he could not, for instance, draw it when and

how he wanted it. He had to go to the colliery once a week at a time named $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

by the company, and when he got there he was kept waiting about for hours

in the cold wind. For all I know he was also expected to touch his cap and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

show gratitude to whoever paid him; at any rate he had to waste an

afternoon and spend sixpence in bus fares. It is very different for a

member of the bourgeoisie, even such a down-at-heel

member as I am. Even when I am on the verge of starvation I have certain rights attaching to my bourgeois status. I do not earn much more than a miner earns, but I do at least get it paid into my bank in a gentle-manly manner and can draw it out when I choose. And even when my account is exhausted the bank people are passably polite.

This business of petty inconvenience and indignity, of being kept waiting about, of having to do everything at other people's convenience, is inherent in working-class life. A thousand influences constantly press a working man down into a passive role. He does not act, he is acted upon. He feels himself the slave of mysterious authority and has a firm conviction that 'they' will never allow him to do this, that, and the other. Once when I was hop-picking I asked the sweated pickers (they earn something under sixpence an hour) why they did not form a union. I was told immediately that 'they' would never allow it. Who were 'they'? I asked. Nobody seemed to know, but evidently 'they' were omnipotent.

A person of bourgeois origin goes through life with some expectation of getting what he wants, within reasonable limits. Hence the fact that in times of stress 'educated' people tend to come to the front; they are no more gifted than the others and their 'education' is generally quite useless in itself, but they are accustomed to a certain amount of deference and consequently have the cheek necessary to a commander. That they will

come to the front seems to be taken for granted, always and everywhere. In Lissagaray's History of the Commune there is an interesting passage describing the shootings that took place after the Commune had been suppressed. The authorities were shooting the ringleaders, and as they did not know who the ringleaders were, they were picking them out on the principle that those of better class would be the ringleaders. An officer walked down a line of prisoners, picking out likely-looking types. One man was shot because he was wearing a watch, another because he 'had an intelligent face'. I should not like to be shot for having an intelligent face, but I do agree that in almost any revolt the leaders would tend to be people who could pronounce their aitches.

4

AS you walk through the industrial towns you lose yourself in labyrinths of little brick houses blackened by smoke, festering in planless chaos round miry alleys and little cindered yards where there are stinking dust-bins and lines of grimy washing and half-ruinous w.c.s. The interiors of these houses are always very much the same, though the number of rooms varies between two or five. All have an almost exactly similar living-room, ten or fifteen feet square, with an open kitchen range; in the larger ones there is a scullery as well, in the smaller ones the sink and copper are in the

living-room. At the back there is the yard, or part of a yard shared by a

number of houses, just big enough for the dustbin and the w.c.s. Not a $\,$

single one has hot water laid on. You might walk, I suppose, through

literally hundreds of miles of streets inhabited by miners, every one of

whom, when he is in work, gets black from head to foot every day, without

ever passing a house in which one could have a bath. It would have been

very simple to install a hot-water system working from the kitchen range,

but the builder saved perhaps ten pounds on each house by not doing so, and

at the time when these houses were built no one imagined that miners wanted baths.

For it is to be noted that the majority of these houses are old, fifty

or sixty years old at least, and great numbers of them are by any ordinary

standard not fit for human habitation. They go on being tenanted simply

because there are no others to be had. And that is the central fact about

housing in the industrial areas: not that the houses are poky and ugly, and

insanitary and comfortless, or that they are distributed in incredibly

filthy slums round belching foundries and stinking canals and slag-heaps

that deluge them with sulphurous smoke--though all this is perfectly true

--but simply that there are not enough houses to go round.

'Housing shortage' is a phrase that has been bandied about pretty

freely since the war, but it means very little to anyone with an income of $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

more than L10 a week, or even L5 a week for that matter. Where rents are

high the difficulty is not to find houses but to find tenants. Walk down

any street in Mayfair and you will see 'To Let' boards in half the windows.

But in the industrial areas the mere difficulty of getting hold of a house

is one of the worst aggravations of poverty. It means that people will put

up with anything--any hole and corner slum, any misery of bugs and

rotting floors and cracking walls, any extortion of skinflint landlords and

blackmailing agents--simply to get a roof over their heads. I have been

into appalling houses, houses in which I would not live a week if you paid

 $\ensuremath{\mathsf{me}}\,,$ and found that the tenants had been there twenty and thirty years and

only hoped they might have the luck to die there. In general these

conditions are taken as a matter of course, though not always. Some people

hardly seem to realize that such things as decent houses exist and look on

bugs and leaking roofs as acts of God; others rail bitterly against their

landlords; but all cling desperately to their houses lest worse should

befall. So long as the housing shortage continues the local authorities

cannot do much to make existing houses more livable. They can 'condemn' a

house, but they cannot order it to be pulled down till the tenant has

another house to go to; and so the condemned houses remain standing and are

all the worse for being condemned, because naturally the landlord will not

spend more than he can help on a house which is going to be demolished

sooner or later. In a town like Wigan, for instance,

there are over two thousand houses standing which have been condemned for years, and whole sections of the town would be condemned en bloc if there were any hope of other houses being built to replace them. Towns like Leeds and Sheffield have scores of thousands of 'back to back' houses which are all of a condemned type but will remain standing for decades.

I have inspected great numbers of houses in various mining towns and villages and made notes on their essential points. I think I can best give an idea of what conditions are like by transcribing a few extracts from my notebook, taken more or less at random. They are only brief notes and they will need certain explanations which I will give afterwards. Here are a few from Wigan:

1. House in Wallgate quarter. Blind back type. One up, one down.
Living-room measures 12 ft by 10 ft, room upstairs the same. Alcove under stairs measuring 5 ft by 5 ft and serving as larder, scullery, and coalhole. Windows will open. Distance to lavatory 50 yards. Rent 4s. 9d., rates 2s. 6d., total 7s. 3d.

- 2. Another near by. Measurements as above, but no alcove under stairs, merely a recess two feet deep containing the sink--no room for larder, etc. Rent 3s. 2d., rates 2s., total 5s. 2d.
- 3. House in Scholes quarter. Condemned house. One up, one down.
 Rooms 15 ft by 15 ft. Sink and copper in living-room,

coal-hole under stairs. Floor subsiding. No windows will open. House decently dry. Landlord good. Rent 3s. 8d. rates 2s. 6d., total 6s. 2d.

- 4. Another near by. Two up, two down, and coal-hole. Walls falling absolutely to pieces. Water comes into upstairs rooms in quantities. Floor lopsided. Downstairs windows will not open. Landlord bad. Rent 6s., rates 3s. 6d., total 9s. 6d.
- 5. House in Greenough's Row. One up, two down. Living-room 13 ft by
 8 ft. Walls coming apart and water comes in. Back windows will not open,
 front ones will. Ten in family with eight children very near together in
 age. Corporations are trying to evict them for overcrowding but cannot find another house to send them to. Landlord bad. Rent
 4s., rates 2s. 3d., total
 6s. 3d.

So much for Wigan. I have pages more of the same type. Here is one from Sheffield--a typical specimen of Sheffield's several score thousand 'back to back' houses:

House in Thomas Street. Back to back, two up, one down (i.e. a three-storey house with one room on each storey). Cellar below. Living-room 14 ft by 10 ft, and rooms above corresponding. Sink in living-room. Top floor has no door but gives on open stairs, Walls in living-room slightly damp, walls in top rooms coming to pieces and oozing damp on all sides.

House is so dark that light has to be kept burning all day. Electricity estimated at 6d. a day (probably an exaggeration). Six in family, parents and foul children. Husband (on P.A.C.) is tuberculous. One child in hospital, the others appear healthy. Tenants have been seven years in this house. Would move, but no other house available. Rent 6s. 6d., rates included.

Here are one or two from Barnslcy:

1. House in Wortley Street. Two up, one down. Living-room 12 ft by 10 ft. Sink and copper in living-room, coal-hole under stairs. Sink worn almost flat and constantly overflowing. Walls not too sound. Penny in slot gas-light. House very dark and gas-light estimated 4d. a day. Upstairs rooms are really one large room partitioned into two. Walls very bad-wall of back room cracked right through. Window-frames coming to pieces and have to be stuffed with wood. Rain comes through in several places. Sewer runs under house and stinks in summer but Corporation 'says they can't do nowt'. Six people in house, two adults and four children, the eldest aged fifteen. Youngest but one attending hospital -- tuberculosis suspected. House infested by bugs. Rent 5s. 3d., including rates.

2. House in Peel Street. Back to back, two up, two down and large cellar. Living-room loft square with copper and sink. The other downstairs room the same size, probably intended as par-lour but

used as bedroom.

Upstairs rooms the same size as those below.

Living-room very dark.

Gas-light estimated at $4\ 1/2d$. a day. Distance to lavatory 70 yards. Four

beds in house for eight people--two old parents, two adult girls (the

eldest aged twenty-seven), one young man, and three children. Parents have

one bed, eldest son another, and remaining five people share the other two.

Bugs very bad--'You can't keep 'em down when it's 'ot.' Indescribable

squalor in downstairs room and smell upstairs almost unbearable. Rent 5s.

7 1/2d., including rates.

3. House in Mapplewell (small mining village near Barnsley). Two

up, one down. Living-room 14 ft by 13 ft. Sink in living-room. Plaster

cracking and coming off walls. No shelves in oven. Gas leaking slightly.

The upstairs rooms each 10 ft by 8 ft. Four beds (for six persons, all

adult), but 'one bed does nowt', presumably for lack of bedclothes. Room

nearest stairs has no door and stairs have no banister, so that when you

step out of bed your foot hangs in vacancy and you may fall ten feet on to

stones. Dry rot so bad that one can see through the floor into the $\ensuremath{\operatorname{room}}$

below. Bugs, but 'I keeps 'em down with sheep dip'. Earth road past these $\,$

cottages is like a muck-heap and said to be almost impassable in winter.

Stone lavatories at ends of gardens in semi-ruinous condition. Tenants have

been twenty-two years in this house. Are L11 in arrears with rent, and have

been paying an extra 1s. a week to pay this off. Landlord now refuses this

and has served orders to quit. Rent 5s., including rates.

And so on and so on and so on. I could multiply examples by the score

--they could be multiplied by the hundred thousand if anyone chose to make

a house-to-house inspection throughout the industrial districts. Meanwhile

some of the expressions I have used need explaining. 'One up, one down'

means one room on each storey--i.e. a two-roomed house. 'Back to back'

houses are two houses built in one, each side of the house being somebody's

front door, so that if you walk down a row of what is apparently twelve

houses you are in reality seeing not twelve houses but twenty-four. The

front houses give on the street and the back ones on the yard, and there is

only one way out of each house. The effect of this is obvious. The

lavatories are in the yard at the back, so that if you live on the side

facing the street, to get to the lavatory or the dust-bin you have to go

out of the front door and walk round the end of the block--a distance

that may be as much as two hundred yards; if you live at the back, on the

other hand, your outlook is on to a row of lavatories. There are also

houses of what is called the 'blind back' type, which are single houses,

but in which the builder has omitted to put in a back door--from pure

spite, apparently. The windows which refuse to open are a peculiarity of

old mining towns. Some of these towns are so undermined by ancient workings

that the ground is constantly subsiding and the

houses above slip sideways.

In Wigan you pass whole rows of houses which have slid to startling angles,

their windows being ten or twenty degrees out of the horizontal. Sometimes

the front wall bellies outward till it looks as though the house were seven

months gone in pregnancy. It can be refaced, but the new facing soon begins

to bulge again. When a house sinks at all suddenly its windows are jammed

for ever and the door has to be refitted. This excites no surprise locally.

The story of the miner who comes home from work and finds that he can only

get indoors by smashing down the front door with an axe is considered

humorous. In some cases I have noted 'Landlord good' or 'Landlord bad',

because there is great variation in what the slum-dwellers say about their

landlords. I found--one might expect it,

perhaps--that the small

landlords are usually the worst. It goes against the grain to say this, but

one can see why it should be so. Ideally, the worst type of slum landlord

is a fat wicked man, preferably a bishop, who is drawing an immense income

from extortionate rents. Actually, it is a poor old woman who has invested

her life's savings in three slum houses, inhabits one of them, and tries to

live on the rent of the other two--never, in consequence, having any money for repairs.

But mere notes like these are only valuable as reminders to myself. To

me as I read them they bring back what I have seen, but they cannot in

themselves give much idea of what conditions are like in those fearful

northern slums. Words are such feeble things. What is the use of a brief

phrase like 'roof leaks' or 'four beds for eight people'? It is the kind of

thing your eye slides over, registering nothing. And yet what a wealth of

misery it can cover! Take the question of

overcrowding, for instance. Quite

often you have eight or even ten people living in a three-roomed house. One

of these rooms is a living-room, and as it probably measures about a dozen

feet square and contains, besides the kitchen range and the sink, a table,

some chairs, and a dresser, there is no room in it for a bed. So there are

eight or ten people sleeping in two small rooms, probably in at most four

beds. If some of these people are adults and have to go to work, so much

the worse. In one house, I remember, three grown-up girls shared the same

bed and all went to work at different hours, each disturbing the others

when she got up or came in; in another house a young miner working on the

night shift slept by day in a narrow bed in which another member of the

family slept by night. There is an added difficulty when there are grown-up

children, in that you cannot let adolescent youths and girls sleep in the

same bed. In one family I visited there were a father and mother and a son $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

and daughter aged round about seventeen, and only two beds for the lot of

them. The father slept with the son and the mother with the daughter; it

was the only arrangement that ruled out the danger of incest. Then there is

the misery of leaking roofs and oozing walls, which in winter makes some

rooms almost uninhabitable. Then there are bugs. Once

bugs get into a house

they are in it till the crack of doom; there is no sure way of

exterminating them. Then there are the windows that will not open. I need

not point out what this must mean, in summer, in a tiny stuffy living-room

where the fire, on which all the cooking is done, has to be kept burning

more or less constantly. And there are the special miseries attendant upon $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

back to back houses. A fifty yards' walk to the lavatory or the dust-bin is

not exactly an inducement to be clean. In the front houses--at any rate

in a side-street where the Corporation don't interfere--the women get

into the habit of throwing their refuse out of the front door, so that the

gutter is always littered with tea-leaves and bread crusts. And it is worth

considering what it is like for a child to grow up in one of the back $\,$

alleys where its gaze is bounded by a row of lavatories and a wall.

In such places as these a woman is only a poor drudge muddling among

an infinity of jobs. She may keep up her spirits, but she cannot keep up

her standards of cleanliness and tidiness. There is always something to be

done, and no conveniences and almost literally not room to turn round. No $\,$

sooner have you washed one child's face than another's is dirty; before you

have washed the crocks from one meal the next is due to be cooked. I found

great variation in the houses I visited. Some were as decent as one could $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

possibly expect in the circumstances, some were so appalling that I have no

hope of describing them adequately. To begin with,

the smell, the dominant

and essential thing, is indescribable. But the squalor and the confusion! A

tub full of filthy water here, a basin full of unwashed crocks there, more

crocks piled in any odd corner, torn newspaper littered everywhere, and in

the middle always the same dreadful table covered with sticky oilcloth and

crowded with cooking pots and irons and half-darned stockings and pieces of

stale bread and bits of cheese wrapped round with greasy newspaper! And the

congestion in a tiny room where getting from one side to the other is a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

complicated voyage between pieces of furniture, with a line of damp washing

getting you in the face every time you move and the children as thick

underfoot as toadstools! There are scenes that stand out vividly in my

memory. The almost bare living-room of a cottage in a little mining

village, where the whole family was out of work and everyone seemed to be

underfed; and the big family of grown-up sons and daughters sprawling

aimlessly about, all strangely alike with red hair, splendid bones, and

pinched faces ruined by malnutrition and idleness; and one tall son sitting

by the fire-place, too listless even to notice the entry of a stranger, and

slowly peeling a sticky sock from a bare foot. A dreadful room in Wigan

where all the furniture seemed to be made of packing cases and barrel

staves and was coming to pieces at that; and an old woman with a blackened

neck and her hair coining down denouncing her landlord in a Lancashire-

Irish accent; and her mother, aged well over ninety,
sitting in the

background on the barrel that served her as a commode and regarding us

blankly with a yellow, cretinous face. I could fill up pages with memories of similar interiors.

Of course the squalor of these people's houses is some-times their own

fault. Even if you live in a back to back house and have four children and

a total income of thirty-two and sixpence a week from the P.A.C., there is $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

no need to have unemptied chamber-pots standing about in your living-room.

But it is equally certain that their circumstances do not encourage self-

respect. The determining factor is probably the number of children. The

best-kept interiors I saw were always childless houses or houses where

there were only one or two children; with, say, six children in a three-

roomed house it is quite impossible to keep anything decent. One thing that

is very noticeable is that the worst squalors are never downstairs. You

might visit quite a number of houses, even among the poorest of the

unemployed, and bring away a wrong impression. These people, you might

reflect, cannot be so badly off if they still have a fair amount of

furniture and crockery. But it is in the rooms upstairs that the gauntness

of poverty really discloses itself. Whether this is because pride makes

people cling to their living-room furniture to the last, or because bedding

is more pawnable, I do not know, but certainly many of the bedrooms I saw $\,$

were fearful places. Among people who have been unemployed for several

years continuously I should say it is the exception

to have anything like a

full set of bedclothes. Often there is nothing that can be properly called

bedclothes at all--just a heap of old overcoats and miscellaneous rags on

a rusty iron bedstead. In this way overcrowding is aggravated. One family

of four persons that I knew, a father and mother and two children, $\$

possessed two beds but could only use one of them because they had not $\,$

enough bedding for the other.

Anyone who wants to see the effects of the housing shortage at their

very worse should visit the dreadful

caravan-dwellings that exist in

numbers in many of the northern towns. Ever since the war, in the complete

impossibility of getting houses, parts of the population have overflowed

into supposedly temporary quarters in fixed caravans. Wigan, for instance,

with a population of about 85,000, has round about 200 caravan-dwellings

with a family in each--perhaps somewhere near 1000 people in all. How

many of these caravan-colonies exist throughout the industrial areas it

would be difficult to discover with any accuracy. The local authorities are

reticent about them and the census report of 1931 seems to have decided to

ignore them. But so far as I can discover by inquiry they are to be found

in most of the larger towns in Lancashire and Yorkshire, and perhaps

further north as well. The probability is that throughout the north of

England there are some thousands, perhaps tens of thousands of families

(not individuals) who have no home except a fixed caravan.

But the word 'caravan' is very misleading. It calls up a picture of a

cosy gypsy-encampment (in fine weather, of course) with wood fires

crackling and children picking blackberries and many-coloured washing

fluttering on the lines. The caravan-colonies in Wigan and Sheffield are

not like that. I had a look at several of them, I inspected those in Wigan

with considerable care, and I have never seen comparable squalor except in

the Far East. Indeed when I saw them I was immediately reminded of the

filthy kennels in which I have seen Indian coolies living in Burma. But, as

a matter of fact, nothing in the East could ever be quite as bad, for in

the East you haven't our clammy, penetrating cold to contend with, and the sun is a disinfectant.

Along the banks of Wigan's miry canal are patches of waste ground on

which the caravans have been dumped like rubbish shot out of a bucket. Some

of them are actually gypsy caravans, but very old ones and in bad repair.

The majority are old single-decker buses (the rather smaller buses of ten

years ago) which have been taken off their wheels and propped up with

struts of wood. Some are simply wagons with semi-circular slats on top,

over which canvas is stretched, so that the people inside have nothing but

canvas between them and the outer air. Inside, these places are usually

about five feet wide by six high (I could not stand quite upright in any of

them) and anything from six to fifteen feet long.

Some, I suppose, are

inhabited by only one person, but I did not see any that held less than two

persons, and some of them contained large families. One, for instance,

measuring fourteen feet long, had seven people in it--seven people in

about 450 cubic feet of space; which is to say that each person had for his

entire dwelling a space a good deal smaller than one compartment of a

public lavatory. The dirt and congestion of these places is such that you

cannot well imagine it unless you have tested it with your own eyes and

more particularly your nose. Each contains a tiny cottage kitchener and

such furniture as can be crammed in--sometimes two beds, more usually

one, into which the whole family have to huddle as best they can. It is

almost impossible to sleep on the floor, because the damp soaks up from

below. I was shown mat-tresses which were still wringing wet at eleven in

the morning. In winter it is so cold that the kitcheners have to be kept

burning day and night, and the windows, need-less to say, are never opened.

Water is got from a hydrant common to the whole colony, some of the

caravan-dwellers having to walk 150 or 200 yards for every bucket of water.

There are no sanitary arrangements at all. Most of the people construct a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

little hut to serve as a lavatory on the tiny patch of ground surrounding

their caravan, and once a week dig a deep hole in which to bury the refuse.

All the people I saw in these places, especially the children, were $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

unspeakably dirty, and I do not doubt that they were lousy as well. They $\,$

could not possibly be otherwise. The thought that

haunted me as I went from caravan to caravan was, What can happen in those cramped interiors when anybody dies? But that, of course, is the kind of question you hardly care to ask.

Some of the people have been in their caravans for many years.

Theoretically the Corporation are doing away with the caravan-colonies and

getting the inhabitants out into houses; but as the houses don't get built,

the caravans remain standing. Most of the people I talked to had given up

the idea of ever getting a decent habitation again. They were all out of

work, and a job and a house seemed to them about equally remote and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

impossible. Some hardly seemed to care; others realized quite clearly in

what misery they were living. One woman's face stays by me, a worn skull-

like face on which was a look of intolerable misery and degradation. $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

gathered that in that dreadful pigsty, struggling to keep her large brood

of children clean, she felt as I should feel if I were coated all over with

dung. One must remember that these people are not gypsies; they are decent

English people who have all, except the children born there, had homes of

their own in their day; besides, their caravans are greatly inferior to

those of gypsies and they have not the great advantage of being on the

move. No doubt there are still middle-class people who think that the Lower

Orders don't mind that kind of thing and who, if they happened to pass a

caravan-colony in the train, would immediately assume that the people lived $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

there from choice. I never argue nowadays with that kind of person. But it

is worth noticing that the caravan-dwellers don't even save money by living

there, for they are paying about the same rents as they would for houses. I

could not hear of any rent lower than five shillings a week (five shillings

for 200 cubic feet of space!) and there are even cases where the rent is as

high as ten shillings. Somebody must be making a good thing out of those

caravans! But dearly their continued existence is due to the housing

shortage and not directly to poverty.

Talking once with a miner I asked him. when the housing shortage first

became acute in his district; he answered, 'When we were told about it',

meaning that till recently people's standards were so low that they took

almost any degree of overcrowding for granted. He added that when he was a

child his family had slept eleven in a room and thought nothing of it, and

that later, when he was grown-up, he and his wife had lived in one of the

old-style back to back houses in which you not only had to walk a couple of

hundred yards to the lavatory but often had to wait in a queue when you got

there, the lavatory being shared by thirty-six people. And when his wife

was sick with the illness that killed her, she still had to make that two

hundred yards' journey to the lavatory. This, he said, was the kind of

thing people would put up with 'till they were told about it'.

I do not know whether that is true. What is certain is that nobody now

thinks it bearable to sleep eleven in a room, and that even people with

comfortable incomes are vaguely troubled by the thought of 'the slums'.

Hence the clatter about 'rehousing' and 'slum clearance' which we have had

at intervals ever since the war. Bishops,

politicians, philanthropists, and

what not enjoy talking piously about 'slum

clearance', because they can

thus divert attention from more serious evils and pretend that if you

abolish the slums you abolish poverty. But all this talk has led to

surprisingly small results. So far as one can discover, the congestion is

no better, perhaps slightly worse, than it was a dozen years ago. There is

certainly great variation in the speed at which the different towns are

attacking their housing problem. In some towns building seems to be almost

at a standstill, in others it is proceeding rapidly and the private

landlord is being driven out of business. Liver-pool, for instance, has

been very largely rebuilt, mainly by the efforts of the Corporation.

Sheffield, too, is being torn down and rebuilt pretty fast, though perhaps,

considering the unparalleled beastliness of its slums, not quite fast

enough.[The number of Corporation houses in process of construction in

Sheffield at the beginning of 1936 was 1398. To replace the slum areas

entirely Sheffield is said to need 100,000 houses.]

Why rehousing has on the whole moved so slowly, and why some towns can

borrow money for building purposes so much more easily than others, I do

not know. Those questions would have to be answered

by someone who knows

more about the machinery of local government than I do. A Corporation house $\,$

costs normally somewhere between three and four hundred pounds; it costs

rather less when it is built by 'direct labour' than when built by

contract. The rent of these houses would average something over twenty

pounds a year not counting rates, so one would think that, even allowing

for overhead expenses and interest on loans, it would pay any Corporation

to build as many houses as could be tenanted. In many cases, of course, the

houses would have to be inhabited by people on the P.A.C., so that the

local bodies would merely be taking money out of one pocket and putting it

into another--i.e. paying out money in the form of relief and taking it

back in the form of rent. But they have got to pay the relief in any case,

and at present a proportion of what they pay is being swallowed up by

private landlords. The reasons given for the slow rate of building are lack

of money and the difficulty of getting hold of sites--for Corporation

houses are not erected piecemeal but in 'estates', sometimes of hundreds of

houses at a time. One thing that always strikes me as mysterious is that so

many of the northern towns see fit to build themselves immense and

luxurious public buildings at the same time as they are in crying need of

dwelling houses. The town of Barnsley, for instance, recently spent close

on L150,000 on a new town hall, although admittedly needing at least 2000

new working-class houses, not to mention public baths. (The public baths in

Barnsley contain nineteen men's slipper baths--this in a town of 70,000 inhabitants, largely miners, not one of whom has a bath in his house!) For L150,000 it could have built 350 Corporation houses and still had L10,000 to spend on a town hall. However, as I say, I do not pretend to understand the mysteries of local government. I merely record the fact that houses are desperately needed and are being built, on the whole, with paralytic slowness.

Still, houses are being built, and the Corporation building estates, with their row upon row of little red houses, all much liker than two. peas (where did that expression come from? Peas have great individuality) are a regular feature of the outskirts of the industrial towns. As to what they are like and how they compare with the slum houses, I can best give an idea by transcribing two more extracts from my diary. The tenants' opinions of their houses vary greatly, so I will give one favourable extract and one unfavourable. Both of these are from Wigan and both are the cheaper 'nonparlour type' houses:

1. House in Beech Hill Estate.

Downstairs. Large living-room with kitchener fireplace, cup-boards, and fixed dresser, composition floor. Small hallway, largish kitchen. Up to date electric cooker hired from Corporation at much the same rate as a gas cooker.

Upstairs. Two largish bedrooms, one tiny one--suitable only for a boxroom or temporary bedroom. Bathroom, w.c., with hot and cold water.

Smallish garden. These vary throughout the estate, but mostly rather smaller than an allotment.

Four in family, parents and two children. Husband in good employ. Houses appear well built and are quite agreeable to look at. Various restrictions, e.g. it is forbidden to keep poultry or pigeons, take in lodgers, sub-let, or start any kind of business with-out leave from the Corporation. (This is easily granted in the case of taking in lodgers, but not in any of the others.) Tenant' very well satisfied with house and proud of it. Houses in this estate all well kept. Corporation are good about repairs, but keep tenants up to the mark with regard to keeping the place tidy, etc.

Rent 11s. 3d. including rates. Bus fare into town 2d.

2. House in Welly Estate.

Downstairs. Living-room 14 ft by 10 ft, kitchen a good deal smaller, tiny larder under stairs, small but fairly good bathroom. Gas cooker, electric lighting. Outdoor w.c.

Upstairs. One bedroom 12 ft by 10 ft with tiny fireplace, another the same size without fireplace, another 7 ft by 6 ft. Best bedroom has

small wardrobe let into wall. 'Garden about 20 yards by 10.

Six in family, parents and four children, eldest son nineteen,

eldest daughter twenty-two. None in work except eldest son. Tenants very

discontented. Their complaints are: 'House is cold, draughty, and damp.

Fireplace in living-room gives out no heat and makes room very dusty--

attributed to its being set too low. Fireplace in best bedroom too small to

be of any use. Walls upstairs cracking. Owing to uselessness of tiny

bedroom, five are sleeping in one bedroom, one (the eldest son) in the other.'

Gardens in this estate all neglected.

Rent 10s. 3d., inclusive. Distance to town a little over a mile-there is no bus here.

I could multiply examples, but these two are enough, as the types of

Corporation houses being built do not vary greatly from place to place. Two

things are immediately obvious. The first is that at their very worst the

Corporation houses are better than the slums they replace. The $\ensuremath{\mathsf{mere}}$

possession of a bathroom and a bit of garden would out-weigh almost any

disadvantage. The other is that they are much more expensive to live in. It

is common enough for a man to be turned out of a condemned house where he

is paying six or seven shillings a week and given a Corporation house where

he has to pay ten. This only affects those who are in

work or have recently

been in work, because when a man is on the P.A.C. his rent is assessed at a

quarter of his dole, and if it is more than this he gets an extra

allowance; in any case, there are certain classes of Corporation houses to

which people on the dole are not admitted. But there are other ways in

which life in a Corporation estate is expensive, whether you are in work or

out of it. To begin with, owing to the higher rents, the shops in the

estate are much more expensive and there are not so many of them. Then

again, in a comparatively large, detached house, away from the frowsy

huddle of the slum, it is much colder and more fuel has to be burnt. And $\,$

again there is the expense, especially for a man in work, of getting to and

from town. This last is one of the more obvious problems of rehousing. Slum

clearance means diffusion of the population. When you rebuild on a large

scale, what you do in effect is to scoop out the centre of the town and

redistribute it on the outskirts. This is all very well in a way; you have

got the people out of fetid alleys into places where they have room to

breathe; but from the point of view of the people themselves, what you have

done is to pick them up and dump them down five miles from their work. The

simplest solution is flats. If people are going to live in large towns at

all they must learn to live on top of one another. But the northern working

people do not take kindly to flats; even where fiats exist they are

contemptuously named 'tenements'. Almost everyone will tell you that he

'wants a house of his own', and apparently a house in the middle of an

unbroken block of houses a hundred yards long seems to them more 'their

own' than a flat situated in mid-air.

To revert to the second of the two Corporation houses I have just

mentioned. The tenant complained that the house was cold, damp, and so

forth. Perhaps the house was jerry-built, but equally probably he was

exaggerating. He had come there from a filthy hovel in the middle of Wigan

which I happened to have inspected previously; while there he had made

every effort to get hold of a Corporation house, and he was no sooner in

the Corporation house than he wanted to be back in the slum. This looks

like mere captiousness but it covers a perfectly genuine grievance. In very

many cases, perhaps in half the cases, I found that the people in

Corporation houses don't really like them. They are glad to get out of the $\,$

stink of the slum, they know that it is better for their children to have

space to play about in, but they don't feel really at home. The exceptions $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

are usually people in good employ who can afford to spend a little extra on

fuel and furniture and journeys, and who in any case are of 'superior' $\,$

type. The others, the typical slum-dwellers, miss the frowsy warmth of the $\,$

slum. They complain that 'out in the country', i.e. on the edge of the

town, they are 'starving' (freezing). Certainly most Corporation estates

are pretty bleak in winter. Some I have been through, perched on treeless

clayey hillsides and swept by icy winds, would be horrible places to live

in. It is not that slum-dwellers want dirt and congestion for their own

sakes, as the fat-bellied bourgeoisie love to believe. (See for instance

the conversation about slum-clearance in Galsworthy's Swan Song, where the

rentier's cherished belief that the slum-dweller makes the slum, and not

vice versa, is put into the mouth of a philanthropic Jew.) Give people a

decent house and they will soon learn to keep it decent. Moreover, with a

smart-looking house to live up to they improve in self-respect and

cleanliness, and their children start life with better chances.

Nevertheless, in a Corporation estate there is an uncomfortable, almost

prison-like atmosphere, and the people who live there are perfectly well aware of it.

And it is here that one comes on the central difficulty of the housing

problem. When you walk through the smoke-dim slums of Manchester you think

that nothing is needed except to tear down these abominations and build

decent houses in their place. But the trouble is that in destroying the

slum you destroy other things as well. Houses are I' desperately needed and $\,$

are not being built fast enough; but in so far as rehousing is being done,

it is being done--perhaps it is unavoidable--in a monstrously inhuman

 $\mbox{'manner.}$ I don't mean merely that the houses are new and ugly. All houses

have got to be new at some time, and as a matter of fact the type of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

Corporation house now being built is not at all

offensive to look at. On

the outskirts of Liverpool there are what amount to whole towns consisting

entirely of Corporation houses, and they are quite pleasing to the eye; the

blocks of workers' flats in the centre of the town modelled, I believe, on

the workers' flats in Vienna, are definitely fine buildings. But there is

something ruthless and soulless about the whole business. Take, for

instance, the restrictions with which you are burdened in a Corporation

house. You are not allowed to keep your house and garden as you want them

--in some estates there is even a regulation that every garden must have

the same kind of hedge. You are not allowed to keep poultry or pigeons. The

Yorkshire miners are fond of keeping homer pigeons; they keep them in the

back yard and take them out and race them on Sundays. But pigeons are messy

birds and the Corporation suppresses them as a matter of course. The

restrictions about shops are more serious. The number of shops in a

Corporation estate is rigidly limited, and it is said that preference is

given to the Co-op and the chain stores; this may not be strictly true, but

certainly those are the shops that one usually sees there. This is bad

enough for the general public, but from the point of view of the

independent shopkeeper it is a disaster. Many a small shopkeeper is utterly

ruined by some rehousing scheme which takes no notice of his existence. ${\tt A}$

whole section of the town is condemned en bloc; presently the houses are

pulled down and the people are transferred to some housing estate miles

away. In this way all the small shopkeepers of the quarter have their whole

clientele taken away from them at a single swoop and receive not a penny of

compensation. They cannot transfer their business to the estate, because

even if they can afford the move and the much higher rents, they would

probably be refused a licence. As for pubs, they are banished from the

housing estates almost completely, and the few that remain are dismal sham-

Tudor places fitted out by the big brewery companies and very expensive.

For a middle-class population this would be a nuisance--it might mean

walking a mile to get a glass of beer; for a working-class population,

which uses the pub as a kind of club, it is a serious blow at communal

life. It is a great achievement to get slum-dwellers into decent houses,

but it is unfortunate that, owing to the peculiar temper of our time, it is

also considered necessary to rob them of the last vestiges of their

liberty. The people themselves feel this, and it is this feeling that they

are rationalizing when they complain that their new houses--so much better,

as houses, than those they have come out of--are cold and uncomfortable and 'unhomelike'.

I sometimes think that the price of liberty is not so $\ensuremath{\mathsf{much}}$ eternal

vigilance as eternal dirt. There are some Corporation estates in which new

tenants are systematically de-loused before being allowed into their

houses. All their possessions except what they stand up in are taken away

from them, fumigated, and sent on to the new house.

This procedure has its

points, for it is a pity that people should take bugs into brand new houses

(a bug will follow you about in your luggage if he gets half a chance), but

it is the kind of thing that makes you wish that the word 'hygiene' could

be dropped out of the dictionary. Bugs are bad, but a state of affairs in

which men will allow themselves to be dipped like sheep is worse. 'Perhaps,

however, when it is a case of slum clearance, one must take for granted ${\bf a}$

certain amount of restrictions and inhumanity. When all is said and done,

the most important thing is that people shall live in decent houses and not

in pigsties. I have seen too much of slums to go into Chestertonian

raptures about them. A place where the children can breathe clean air, and

women have a few conveniences to save them from drudgery, and a man has a

bit of garden to dig in, must be better than the stinking back-streets of

Leeds and Sheffield. On balance, the Corporation Estates are better than

the slums; but only by a small margin.

When I was looking into the housing question I visited and inspected

numbers of houses, perhaps a hundred or two hundred houses altogether, in

various mining towns and villages. I cannot end this chapter without $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

remarking on the extraordinary courtesy and good nature with which I was $\,$

received everywhere. I did not go alone--I always had some local friend

among the unemployed to show me round--but even so, it is an impertinence

to go poking into strangers' houses and asking to see the cracks in the

bedroom wall. Yet everyone was astonishingly patient and seemed to

understand almost without explanation why I was questioning them and what I $\,$

wanted to see. If any unauthorized person walked into my house and began

asking me whether the roof leaked and whether I was much troubled by bugs $\,$

and what I thought of $my\ landlord,\ I$ should probably tell him to go to

hell. This only happened to me once, and in that case the woman was

slightly deaf and took me for a Means Test nark; but even she relented

after a while and gave me the information I wanted.

I am told that it is bad form for a writer to quote his own reviews,

but I want here to contradict a reviewer in the Manchester Guardian who says apropos of one of my books:

Set down in Wigan or Whitechapel Mr Orwell would still exercise an unerring power of closing his vision to all that is good in order to proceed with his wholehearted vilification of humanity.

Wrong. Mr Orwell was 'set down' in Wigan for quite a while and it did

not inspire him with any wish to vilify humanity. He liked Wigan very much

 $\mbox{---}\mbox{the people, not the scenery. Indeed, he has only one fault to find with$

his heart on seeing. Alas! Wigan Pier had been demolished, and even the

spot where it used to stand is no longer certain.

When you see the unemployment figures quoted at two millions, it is fatally

easy to take this as meaning that two million people are out of work and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

the rest of the population is comparatively comfortable. I admit that till

recently I was in the habit of doing so myself. I used to calculate that if

you put the registered unemployed at round about two millions and threw in $\,$

the destitute and those who for one reason and another were not registered,

you might take the number of underfed people in England (for everyone on $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\} =\left$

the dole or thereabouts is underfed) as being, at the very most, five millions.

This is an enormous under-estimate, because, in the first place, the

only people shown on unemployment figures are those actually drawing the

dole--that is, in general, heads of families. An unemployed man's

dependants do not figure on the list unless they too are drawing a separate

allowance. A Labour Exchange officer told me that to get at the real number

of people living on (not drawing) the dole, you have got to multiply the $\,$

official figures by something over three. This alone brings the number of

unemployed to round about six millions. But in addition there are great

numbers of people who are in work but who, from a financial point of view,

might equally well be unemployed, because they are not drawing anything

that can be described as a living wage. [For instance, a recent census of

the Lancashire cotton mills revealed the fact that over 40,000 full-time

employees receive less than thirty shillings a week each. In Preston,

to take only one town, the number receiving over thirty shillings a week

was 640 and the number receiving wider thirty shillings was 3113.] Allow

for these and their dependants, throw in as before the old-age pensioners,

the destitute, and other nondescripts, and you get an underfed population

of well over ten millions. Sir John Orr puts it at twenty millions.

Take the figures for Wigan, which is typical enough of the industrial

and mining districts. The number of insured workers is round about 36,000

(26,000 men and 10,000 women). Of these, the number unemployed at the

beginning of 1936 was about 10,000. But this was in winter when the mines

are working full time; in summer it would probably be 12,000. Multiply by

three, as above, and you get 30,000 or 36,000. The total population of

Wigan is a little under 87,000; so that at any moment more than one person

in three out of the whole population--not merely the registered workers

 $\mbox{--}\mbox{is}$ either drawing or living on the dole. Those ten or twelve thousand

unemployed contain a steady core of from four to five thousand miners who

have been continuously unemployed for the past seven years. And Wigan is $\,$

not especially badly off as industrial towns go. 'Even in Sheffield, which

has been doing well for the last year or so because of wars and rumours of

war, the proportion of unemployment is about the same--one in three of registered workers unemployed.

When a man is first unemployed, until his insurance stamps are exhausted, he draws 'full benefit', of which the rates are as follows:

per week

Single man 17s. Wife 9s. Each child below 14 3s.

Thus in a typical family of parents and three children of whom one was over fourteen, the total income would be 32s. per week, plus anything that might be earned by the eldest child. When a man's stamps are exhausted, before being turned over to the P.A.C. (Public Assistance Committee), he receives twenty-six weeks' 'transitional benefit' from the U.A.B. (Unemployment Assistance Board), the rates being as

follows:

per week

Single man	15s.	
Man and wife	24s.	
Children 14-18	6s.	
Children 11-14	4s. 60	d.
Children 8-11	4s.	
Children 5-8	3s. 60	d.
Children 3-5	3s.	

Thus on the U.A.B. the income of the typical family of five persons $\ \ \,$

would be 37s. 6d. a week if no child was in work. When a man is on the

U.A.B. a quarter of his dole is regarded as rent, with a minimum of 7s. 6d.

a week. If the rent he is paying is more than a quarter of his dole he

receives an extra allowance, but if it is less than 7s. 6d., a

corresponding amount is deducted. Payments on the P.A.C. theoretically

of benefit are:

per week

Single man 12s. 6d.

Man and wife 23s.

Eldest child 4s.

Any other child 3s.

Being at the discretion of the local bodies these rates vary slightly,

and a single man may or may not get an extra 2s. 6d. weekly, bringing his

regarded as rent. Thus in the typical family considered above the total

income would be 33s. a week, a quarter of this being regarded as rent. In

addition, in most districts a coal allowance of 1s. 6d. a week (1s. 6d. is

equivalent to about a hundredweight of coal) is granted for six weeks

before and six weeks after Christmas.

It will be seen that the income of a family on the dole normally

averages round about thirty shillings a week. One can write at least a $\,$

quarter of this off as rent, which is to say that the average person, child

or adult, has got to be fed, clothed, warmed, and otherwise cared-for for

six or seven shillings a week. Enormous groups of people, probably at least

a third of the whole population of the industrial areas, are living at this

level. The Means Test is very strictly enforced, and you are liable to be

refused relief at the slightest hint that you are getting money from

another source. Dock-labourers, for instance, who are generally hired by

the half-day, have to sign on at a Labour Exchange twice daily; if they

fail to do so it is assumed that they have been working and their dole is

reduced correspondingly. I have seen cases of evasion of the Means Test,

but I should say that in the industrial towns, where there is still a $\$

certain amount of communal life and everyone has neighbours who know him,

it is much harder than it would be in London. The usual method is for a

young man who is actually living with his parents to get an accommodation

address, so that supposedly he has a separate establishment and draws a

separate allowance. But there is much spying and tale-bearing. One man $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

knew, for instance, was seen feeding his neighbour's chickens while the

neighbour was away. It was reported to the authorities that he 'had a job

feeding chickens' and he had great difficulty in refuting this. The $\,$

favourite joke in Wigan was about a man who was refused relief on the

ground that he 'had a job carting firewood'. He had

been seen, it was said,

carting firewood at night. He had to explain that he was not carting

firewood but doing a moonlight flit. The 'firewood' was his furniture.

The most cruel and evil effect of the Means Test is the way in which

it breaks up families. Old people, sometimes bedridden, are driven out of

their homes by it. An old age pensioner, for instance, if a widower, would

normally live with one or other of his children; his weekly ten shillings

goes towards the household expenses, and probably he is not badly cared

for. Under the Means Test, however, he counts as a 'lodger' and if he stays

at home his children's dole will be docked. So, perhaps at seventy or

seventy-five years of age, he has to turn out into lodgings, handing his

pension over to the lodging-house keeper and existing on the verge of

starvation. I have seen several cases of this myself. It is happening all

over England at this moment, thanks to the Means Test.

Nevertheless, in spite of the frightful extent of unemployment, it is

a fact that poverty--extreme poverty--is less in evidence in the

industrial North than it is in London. Everything is poorer and shabbier,

there are fewer motor-cars and fewer well-dressed people; but also there

are fewer people who are obviously destitute. Even in a town the size of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

Liverpool or Manchester you are struck by the fewness of the beggars.

London is a sort of whirlpool which draws derelict people towards it, and

it is so vast that life there is solitary and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

anonymous. Until you break

the law nobody will take any notice of you, and you can go to pieces as you

could not possibly do in a place where you had neighbours who knew you. But

in the industrial towns the old communal way of life has not yet broken up,

tradition is still strong and almost everyone has a family--potentially,

therefore, a home. In a town of 50,000 or 100,000 inhabitants there is no

casual and as it were unaccounted-for population; nobody sleeping in the

streets, for instance. Moreover, there is just this to be said for the

unemployment regulations, that they do not discourage people from marrying.

A man and wife on twenty-three shillings a week are not far from the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{T}}$

starvation line, but they can make a home of sorts; they are vastly better

off than a single man on fifteen shillings. The life of a single unemployed

man is dreadful. He lives sometimes in a common lodging-house, more often

in a 'furnished' room for which he usually pays six shillings a week,

finding himself as best he can on the other nine (say six shillings a week

for food and three for clothes, tobacco, and amusements). Of course he

cannot feed or look after himself properly, and a man who pays $\ensuremath{\operatorname{six}}$

shillings a week for his room is not encouraged to be indoors more than is

necessary. So he spends his days loafing in the public library or any other

place where he can keep warm. That keeping warm--is almost the sole

preoccupation of a single unemployed man in winter. In Wigan a favourite

refuge was the pictures, which are fantastically cheap there. You can

always get a seat for fourpence, and at the matinee at some houses you can

even get a seat for twopence. Even people on the verge of starvation will

readily pay twopence to get out of the ghastly cold of a winter afternoon.

In Sheffield I was taken to a public hall to listen to a lecture by a

clergyman, and it was by a long way the silliest and worst-delivered

lecture I have ever heard or ever expect to hear. I found it physically

impossible to sit it out, indeed my feet carried me out, seemingly of their

own accord, before it was half-way through. Yet the hall was thronged with

unemployed men; they would have sat through far worse drivel for the sake

of a warm place to shelter in.

At times I have seen unmarried men on the dole living in the extreme

of misery. In one town I remember a whole colony of them who were $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

squatting, more or less illicitly, in a derelict house which was

practically falling down. They had collected a few scraps of furniture,

presumably off refuse-tips, and I remember that their sole table was an old

marble-topped wash-hand-stand. But this kind of thing is exceptional. A

working-class bachelor is a rarity, and so long as a $\mbox{\tt man}$ is $\mbox{\tt married}$

unemployment makes comparatively little alteration in his way of life. His

home is impoverished but it is still a home, and it is noticeable

everywhere that the anomalous position created by unemployment--the man

being out of work while the woman's work continues as before--has not

altered the relative status of the sexes. In a

working-class home it is the man who is the master and not, as in a middle-class home, the woman or the baby. Practically never, for instance, in a working-class home, will you see the man doing a stroke of the housework. Unemployment has not changed this convention, which on the face of it seems $\ensuremath{\mathtt{a}}$ little unfair. The man is idle from morning to night but the woman is as busy as ever--more so, indeed, because she has to manage with less money. Yet so far as my experience goes the women do not protest. I believe that they, as well as the men, feel that a man would lose his manhood if, merely because he was out of work, he developed into a 'Mary Ann'.

But there is no doubt about the deadening, debilitating effect of unemployment upon everybody, married or single, and upon men more than upon women. The best intellects will not stand up against it. Once or twice it has happened to me to meet unemployed men of genuine literary ability; there are others whom I haven't met but whose work I occasionally see in the magazines. Now and again, at long intervals, these men will produce an article or a short story which is quite obviously better than most of the stuff that gets whooped up by the blurb-reviewers. Why, then, do they make so little use of their talents? They have all the leisure in the world; why don't they sit down and write books? Because to write books you need not only comfort and solitude -- and solitude is never easy to attain in a working-class home--you also need peace of mind. You

can't settle to

anything, you can't command the spirit of hope in which anything has got to

be created, with that dull evil cloud of unemployment hanging over you.

Still, an unemployed man who feels at home with books can at any rate $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

occupy himself by reading. But what about the man who cannot read without

discomfort? Take a miner, for instance, who has worked in the pit since

childhood and has been trained to be a miner and nothing else. How the

devil is he to fill up the empty days? It is absurd to say that he ought to

be looking for work. There is no work to look for, and everybody knows it.

You can't go on looking for work every day for seven years. There are

allotments, which occupy the time and help to feed a family, but in a big

town there are only allotments for a small proportion of the people. Then

there are the occupational centres which were started a few years ago to

help the unemployed. On the whole this movement has been a failure, but

some of the centres are still flourishing. I have visited one or two of

them. There are shelters where the men can keep warm and there are $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

periodical classes in carpentering, boot-making, leather-work, handloom-

weaving, basket-work, sea-grass work, etc., etc.; the idea being that the

men can make furniture and so forth, not for sale but for their own homes,

getting tools free and materials cheaply. Most of the Socialists I have

talked to denounce this movement as they denounce the project--it is

always being talked about but it never comes to anything--to give the

unemployed small-holdings. They say that the

occupational centres are

simply a device to keep the unemployed quiet and give them the illusion

that something is being done for them. Undoubtedly that is the underlying

motive. Keep a man busy mending boots and he is less likely to read the

Daily Worker. Also there is a nasty Y.M.C.A.

atmosphere about these places

which you can feel as soon as you go in. The unemployed men who frequent

them are mostly of the cap-touching type--the type who tells you oilily

that he is 'Temperance' and votes Conservative. Yet even here you feel

yourself torn both ways. For probably it is better that a man should waste

his time even with such rubbish as sea-grass work than that for years upon

end he should do absolutely nothing.

By far the best work for the unemployed is being done by the $\,$

N.U.W.M.--National Unemployed Workers' Movement. This is a revolutionary

organization intended to hold the unemployed together, stop them

blacklegging during strikes, and give them legal advice against the Means

Test. It is a movement that has been built out of nothing by the pennies

and efforts of the unemployed themselves. I have seen a good deal of the

 $\ensuremath{\text{N.U.W.M.}}$, and I greatly admire the men, ragged and underfed like the

others, who keep the organization going. Still more $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$ admire the tact and

patience with which they do it; for it is not easy to coax even a penny-a-

week subscription out of the pockets of people on the P.A.C. As I said

earlier, the English working class do not show much capacity for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

leadership, but they have a wonderful talent for organization. The whole

trade union movement testifies to this; so do the excellent working-men's

clubs--really a sort of glorified cooperative pub, and splendidly

organized--which are so common in Yorkshire. In many towns the ${\tt N.U.W.M.}$

have shelters and arrange speeches by Communist speakers. But even at these

shelters the men who go there do nothing but sit round the stove and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

occasionally play a game of dominoes. If this move-met could be combined

with something along the lines of the occupational centres, it would be

nearer what is needed. It is a deadly thing to see a skilled man running to

seed, year after year, in utter, hopeless idleness. It ought not to be

impossible to give him the chance of using his hands and making furniture

and so forth for his own home, with-out turning him into a Y.M.C.A. cocoa-

drunkard. We may as well face the fact that several million men in England

will--unless another war breaks out--never have a real job this side

the grave. One thing that probably could be done and certainly ought to be

done as a matter of course is to give every unemployed man a patch of

ground and free tools if he chose to apply for them. It is disgraceful that

men who are expected to keep alive on the P.A.C. should not even have the

chance to grow vegetables for their families.

To study unemployment and its effects you have got to go to the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

industrial areas. In the South unemployment exists, but it is scattered and queerly unobtrusive. There are plenty of rural

districts where a man out of

work is almost unheard-of, and you don't anywhere see the spectacle of

whole blocks of cities living on the dole and the P.A.C. It is only when

you lodge in streets where nobody has a job, where getting a job seems

about as probable as owning an aeroplane and much less probable than

winning fifty pounds in the Football Pool, that you begin to grasp the

changes that are being worked in our civilization.

For a change is taking

place, there is no doubt about that. The attitude of the submerged working

class is profoundly different from what it was seven or eight years ago.

I first became aware of the unemployment problem in 1928. At that time

I had just come back from $\operatorname{Burma},$ where unemployment was only a word, and I

had gone to Burma when I was still a boy and the post-war boom was not

quite over. When I first saw unemployed men at close quarters, the thing

that horrified and amazed me was to find that many of them were ashamed of

being unemployed. I was very ignorant, but not so ignorant as to imagine

that when the loss of foreign markets pushes two million men out of work,

those two million are any more to blame than the people who draw blanks in

the Calcutta Sweep. But at that time nobody cared to admit that

unemployment was inevitable, because this meant admitting that it would

probably continue. The middle classes were still talking about 'lazy idle

loafers on the dole' and saying that 'these men could all find work if they

wanted to', and naturally these opinions percolated

to the working class

themselves. I remember the shock of astonishment it gave me, when I first $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

mingled with tramps and beggars, to find that a fair proportion, perhaps a

quarter, of these beings whom I had been taught to regard as cynical

parasites, were decent young miners and cotton-workers gazing at their

destiny with the same sort of dumb amazement as an animal in a trap. They

simply could not understand what was happening to them. They had been $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

brought up to work, and behold! it seemed as if they were never going to

have the chance of working again. In their circumstances it was inevitable,

at first, that they should be haunted by a feeling of personal degradation.

That was the attitude towards unemployment in those days: it was a disaster

which happened to you as an individual and for which you were to blame.

When a quarter of a million miners are unemployed, it is part of the

order of things that Alf Smith, a miner living in the back streets of

Newcastle, should be out of work. Alf Smith is merely one of the quarter

million, a statistical unit. But no human being finds it easy to regard $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

himself as a statistical unit. So long as $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Bert}}$ Jones across the street is

still at work, Alf Smith is bound to feel himself dishonoured and a

failure. Hence that frightful feeling of impotence and despair which is

almost the worst evil of unemployment--far worse than any hardship, worse $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

than the demoralization of enforced idleness, and $\mbox{Only}\ \mbox{less}$ bad than the

physical degeneracy of Alf Smith's children, born on

the P.A.C. Everyone

who saw Greenwood's play Love on the Dole must remember that dreadful

moment when the poor, good, stupid working man beats on the table and cries

out, 'O God, send me some work!' This was not dramatic exaggeration, it was

a touch from life. That cry must have been uttered, in almost those words,

in tens of thousands, perhaps hundreds of thousands of English homes, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

during the past fifteen years.

But, I think not again--or at least, not so often. That is the real

point: people are ceasing to kick against the pricks. After all, even the

middle classes--yes, even the bridge dubs in the country towns--are

beginning to realize that there is such a thing as unemployment. The ${}^{\scriptscriptstyle \mathsf{I}}\mathsf{M}\mathsf{y}$

dear, I don't believe in all this nonsense about unemployment. Why, only

last week we wanted a man to weed the garden, and we simply couldn't get

one. They don't want to work, that's all it is!' which you heard at every

decent tea-table five years ago, is growing perceptibly less frequent. As

for the working class themselves, they have gained immensely in economic

knowledge. I believe that the Daily Worker has accomplished a great deal

here: its influence is out of all proportion to its circulation. But in any

case they have had their lesson well rubbed into them, not only because

unemployment is so widespread but because it has lasted so long. When

people live on the dole for years at a time they grow used to it, and

drawing the dole, though it remains unpleasant, ceases to be shameful. Thus

the old, independent, workhouse-fearing tradition is undermined, just as

the ancient fear of debt is undermined by the hire-purchase system. In the

back streets of Wigan and Barnsley I saw every kind of privation, but I $\,$

probably saw much less conscious misery than I should have seen ten years

ago. The people have at any rate grasped that unemployment is a thing they

cannot help. It is not only Alf Smith who is out of work now; Bert Jones is

out of work as well, and both of them have been 'out' for years. It makes a

great deal of difference when things are the same for everybody.

So you have whole populations settling down, as it were, to a lifetime $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

on the P.A.C. And what I think is admirable, perhaps even hopeful, is that

they have managed to do it without going spiritually to pieces. A working

man does not disintegrate under the strain of poverty as a middle-class

person does. Take, for instance, the fact that the working class think

nothing of getting married on the dole. It annoys the old ladies in

Brighton, but it is a proof of their essential good sense; they realize

that losing your job does not mean that you cease to be a human being. So

that in one way things in the distressed areas are not as bad as they might

be. Life is still fairly normal, more normal than one really has the right

to expect. Families are impoverished, but the family-system has not broken

up. The people are in effect living a reduced version of their former

lives. Instead of raging against their destiny they have made things

tolerable by lowering their standards.

But they don't necessarily lower their standards by cutting I out

luxuries and concentrating on necessities; more often it is the other way

about--the more natural way, if you come to think of it. Hence the fact

that in a decade of unparalleled depression, the consumption of all cheap

luxuries has in-creased. The two things that have probably made the

greatest difference of all are the movies and the mass-production of cheap

smart clothes since the war. The youth who leaves school at fourteen and

gets a blind-alley job is out of work at twenty, probably for life; but for

two pounds ten on the hire-purchase he can buy himself a suit which, for a $\ensuremath{\mbox{}}$

little while and at a little distance, looks as though it had been tailored

in Savile Row. The girl can look like a fashion plate at an even lower

price. You may have three halfpence in your pocket and not a prospect in

the world, and only the corner of a leaky bedroom to go home to; but in

your new clothes you can stand on the street corner, indulging in a private

daydream of yourself as dark Gable or Greta Garbo, which compensates you

for a great deal. And even at home there is generally a cup of tea going--

a 'nice cup of tea'--and Father, who has been out of work since 1929, is

temporarily happy because he has a sure tip for the Cesarewitch.

Trade since the war has had to adjust itself to meet the demands of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

underpaid, underfed people, with the result that a luxury is nowadays

almost always cheaper than a necessity. One pair of plain solid shoes costs

as much as two ultra-smart pairs. For the price of one square meal you can

get two pounds of cheap sweets. You can't get much meat for threepence, but

you can get a lot offish-and-chips. Milk costs threepence a pint and even

'mild' beer costs fourpence, but aspirins are seven a penny and you can

wring forty cups of tea out of a quarter-pound packet. And above all there

is gambling, the cheapest of all luxuries. Even people on the verge of

starvation can buy a few days' hope ('Something to live for', as they call

it) by having a penny on a sweepstake. Organized gambling has now risen

almost to the status of a major industry. Consider, for instance, a

phenomenon like the Football Pools, with a turnover of about six million

pounds a year, almost all of it from the pockets of working-class people. I

happened to be in Yorkshire when Hitler re-occupied the Rhineland. Hitler,

Locarno, Fascism, and the threat of war aroused hardly a flicker of

interest locally, but the decision of the Football Association to stop

publishing their fixtures in advance (this was an attempt to quell the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

Football Pools) flung all Yorkshire into a storm of fury. And then there is

the queer spectacle of modern electrical science showering miracles upon

people with empty bellies. You may shiver all night for lack of bedclothes,

but in the morning you can go to the public library and read the news that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

has been telegraphed for your benefit from San Francisco and Singapore.

Twenty million people are underfed but literally

everyone in England has

access to a radio. What we have lost in food we have gained in electricity.

Whole sections of the working class who have been plundered of all they

really need are being compensated, in part, by cheap luxuries which

mitigate the surface of life.

Do you consider all this desirable? No, I don't. But it may be that

the psychological adjustment which the working class are visibly making is

the best they could make in the circumstances. They have neither turned

revolutionary nor lost their self-respect; merely they have kept their

tempers and settled down to make the best of things on a fish-and-chip

standard. The alternative would be God knows what continued agonies of

despair; or it might be attempted insurrections which, in a strongly

governed country like England, could only lead to futile massacres and \boldsymbol{a}

regime of savage repression.

Of course the post-war development of cheap luxuries has been a very

fortunate thing for our rulers. It is quite likely that fish-and-chips,

art-silk stockings, tinned salmon, cut-price
chocolate (five two-ounce bars

for sixpence), the movies, the radio, strong tea, and the Football Pools

have between them averted revolution. Therefore we are some-times told that

the whole thing is an astute manoeuvre by the governing class--a sort of

'bread and circuses' business--to hold the unemployed down. What I have

seen of our governing class does not convince me that they have that much $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

intelligence. The thing has happened, but by an un-conscious process—the quite natural interaction between the manufacturer's need for a market and the need of half-starved people for cheap palliatives.

6

When I was a small boy at school a lecturer used to come once a term and deliver excellent lectures on famous battles of the past, such as Blenheim, Austerlitz, etc. He was fond of quoting Napoleon's maxim 'An army marches on its stomach', and at the end of his lecture he would suddenly turn to us and demand, 'What's the most important thing in the world?' We were expected to shout 'Food!' and if we did not do so he was disappointed.

Obviously he was right in a way. A human being is primarily a bag for putting food into; the other functions and faculties may be more godlike, but in point of time they come afterwards. A man dies and is buried, and all his words and actions are forgotten, but the food he has eaten lives after him in the sound or rotten bones of his children. I think it could be plausibly argued that changes of diet are more important than changes of dynasty or even of religion. The Great War, for instance, could never have happened if tinned food had not been invented. And the history of the past four hundred years in England would have been immensely different if it had not been for the introduction of root-crops and

various other vegetables at

the end of the Middle Ages, and a little later the introduction of non-

alcoholic drinks (tea, coffee, cocoa) and also of distilled liquors to

which the beer-drinking English were not accustomed.

Yet it is curious how

seldom the all-importance of food is recognized. You see statues everywhere

to politicians, poets, bishops, but none to cooks or bacon-curers or

market-gardeners. The Emperor Charles ${\tt V}$ is said to have erected a statue to

the inventor of bloaters, but that is the only case I can think of at the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{moment}}.$

So perhaps the really important thing about the unemployed, the really

basic thing if you look to the future, is the diet they are living on. As I

said earlier, the average unemployed family lives on an income of round

about thirty shillings a week, of which at least a quarter goes in rent. It

is worth considering in some detail how the remaining money is spent. $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

have here a budget which was made out for me by an unemployed miner and his

wife. I asked them to make a list which represented as exactly as possible

their expenditure in a typical week. This man's allowance was thirty-two

shillings a week, and besides his wife he had two children, one aged two

years and five months and the other ten months. Here is the list:

s. d.

Rent 9 0 1/2 Clothing Club 3 0

Coal	2	0
Gas	1	3
Milk	0	10 1/2
Union Fees	0	3
Insurance (on the children) 0	2
Meat	2	6
Flour (2 stone)	3	4
Yeast	0	4
Potatoes	1	0
Dripping	0	10
Margarine	0	10
Bacon	1	2
Sugar	1	9
Tea	1	0
Jam	0	7 1/2
Peas and cabbage	0	6
Carrots and onions	0	4
Quaker oats	0	4 1/2
Soap, powders, blue, etc.	0	10
Total	L1 1	2 0

In addition to this, three packets of dried milk were sup-plied weekly

for the baby by the Infants' Welfare Clinic. One or two comments are needed

here. To begin with the list leaves out a great deal--blacking, pepper,

salt, vinegar, matches, kindling-wood, raeor blades, replacements of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

utensils, and wear and tear of furniture and bedding, to name the first $\ensuremath{\mathsf{few}}$

that come to mind. Any money spent on these would $\ensuremath{\mathsf{mean}}$ reduction on some

other item. A more serious charge is tobacco. This man happened to be a

small smoker, but even so his tobacco would hardly cost less than a $\,$

shilling a week, meaning a further reduction on food. The 'clothing clubs'

into which unemployed people pay so much a week are

run by big drapers in all the industrial towns. Without them it would be impossible for unemployed people to buy new clothes at all. I don't know whether or not they buy bedding through these clubs. This particular family, as I happen

to know, possessed next to no bedding. In the above list, if you allow a shilling for tobacco and deduct this and the other non-food items, you are left with sixteen and fivepence halfpenny. Call it sixteen shillings and leave the baby out of account -for the baby was getting its weekly packets of milk from the Welfare Clinic. This sixteen shillings has got to provide the entire nourishment, including fuel, of three persons, two of them adult. The first question is whether it is even theoretically possible for three persons to be properly nourished on sixteen shillings a week. When the dispute over the Means Test was in progress there was a disgusting public wrangle about the minimum weekly sum on which a human being could keep alive. one school of dietitians worked it out at five and

So far as I remember,

ninepence, while another

school, more generous, put it at five and ninepence halfpenny. After this

there were letters to the papers from a number of people who claimed to be

feeding themselves on four shillings a week. Here is a weekly budget (it

was printed in the New Statesman and also in the News of the World) which I

picked out from among a number of others:

3 wholemeal loaves	1 0
1/2 lb. margarine	0 2 1/2
1/2 lb. dripping	0 3
1 lb. cheese	0 7
1 lb. onions	0 1 1/2
1 lb. carrots	0 1 1/2
1 lb. broken biscuits	0 4
2 lb. dates	0 6
1 tin evaporated milk	0 5
10 oranges	0 5
Total	3 11 1/2

Please notice that this budget contains nothing for fuel. In fact, the

writer explicitly stated that he could not afford to buy fuel and ate all

his food raw. Whether the letter was genuine or a hoax does not matter at

the moment. What I think will be admitted is that this list represents

about as wise an expenditure as could be contrived; if you had to live on

three and elevenpence halfpenny a week, you could hardly extract more food-

value from it than that. So perhaps it is possible to feed yourself

adequately on the ${\tt P.A.C.}$ allowance if you concentrate on essential

foodstuffs; but not otherwise.

Now compare this list with the unemployed miner's budget that I gave

earlier. The miner's family spend only tenpence a week on green vegetables

and tenpence half-penny on milk (remember that one of them is a child less $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

than three years old), and nothing on fruit; but they spend one and nine on $% \left\{ 1,2,...,n\right\}$

sugar (about eight pounds of sugar, that is) and a

shilling on tea. The

half-crown spent on meat might represent a small joint and the materials

for a stew; probably as often as not it would represent four or five tins

of bully beef. The basis of their diet, therefore, is white bread and

margarine, corned beef, sugared tea, and potatoes--an appalling diet.

Would it not be better if they spent more money on wholesome things like

oranges and wholemeal bread or if they even, like the writer of the letter $\ensuremath{\mathsf{e}}$

to the New Statesman, saved on fuel and ate their carrots raw? Yes, it

would, but the point is that no ordinary human being is ever going to do

such a thing. The ordinary human being would sooner starve than live on

brown bread and raw carrots. And the peculiar evil is this, that the less

money you have, the less inclined you feel to spend it on wholesome food. A

millionaire may enjoy breakfasting off orange juice and Ryvita biscuits; an

unemployed man doesn't. Here the tendency of which I spoke at the end of

the last chapter comes into play. When you are unemployed, which is to say

when you are underfed, harassed, bored, and miserable, you don't want to

eat dull wholesome food. You want something a little bit 'tasty'. There is

always some cheaply pleasant thing to tempt you.

Let's have three pennorth

of chips! Run out and buy us a twopenny ice-cream! Put the kettle on and

we'll all have a nice cup of tea! That is how your mind works when you are

at the P.A.C. level. White bread-and-marg and sugared tea don't nourish you

to any extent, but they are nicer (at least most people think so) than

brown bread-and-dripping and cold water. Unemployment is an endless misery

that has got to be constantly palliated, and especially with tea, the

English-man's opium. A cup of tea or even an aspirin is much better as a $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

temporary stimulant than a crust of brown bread.

The results of all this are visible in a physical degeneracy which you

can study directly, by using your eyes, or inferentially, by having a look

at the vital statistics. The physical average in the industrial towns is

terribly low, lower even than in London. In Sheffield you have the feeling

of walking among a population of troglodytes. The miners are splendid men,

but they are usually small, and the mere fact that their muscles are

toughened by constant work does not mean that their children start life

with a better physique. In any case the miners are physically the pick of

the population. The most obvious sign of under-nourishment is the badness

of everybody's teeth. In Lancashire you would have to look for a long time

before you saw a working-class person with good natural teeth. Indeed, you

see very few people with natural teeth at all, apart from the children; and

even the children's teeth have a frail bluish appearance which means, I

suppose, calcium deficiency. Several dentists have told me that in

industrial districts a person over thirty with any of his or her own teeth

is coming to be an abnormality. In Wigan various people gave me their

opinion that it is best to get shut of your teeth as early in life as

possible. 'Teeth is just a misery,' one woman said to

me. In one house

where I stayed there were, apart from myself, five people, the oldest being

forty-three and the youngest a boy of fifteen. Of these the boy was the

only one who possessed a single tooth of his own, and his teeth were

obviously not going to last long. As for the vital statistics, the fact

that in any large industrial town the death rate and infant mortality of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

the poorest quarters are always about double those of the well-to-do $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

residential quarters--a good deal more than double in some cases--

hardly needs commenting on.

Of course one ought not to imagine that the prevailing bad physique is

due solely to unemployment, for it is probable that the physical average

has been declining all over England for a long time past, and not merely

among the unemployed in the industrial areas. This cannot be proved

statistically, but it is a conclusion that is forced upon you if you use

your eyes, even in rural places and even in a prosperous town like London.

On the day when King George V's body passed through London on its way to

Westminster, I happened to be caught for an hour or two in the crowd in

Trafalgar Square. It was impossible, looking about one then, not to be

struck by the physical degeneracy of modern England. The people surrounding

me were not working-class people for the most part; they were the

shopkeeper--commercial-traveller type, with a sprinkling of the well-to- $\,$

do. But what a set they looked! Puny limbs, sickly faces, under the weeping

London sky! Hardly a well-built man or a

decent-looking woman, and not a

fresh complexion anywhere. As the King's coffin went by, the men took off

their hats, and a friend who was in the crowd at the other side of the

Strand said to me afterwards, 'The only touch of colour anywhere was the

bald heads.' Even the Guards, it seemed to me--there was a squad of

guardsmen marching beside the coffin--were not what they used to be.

Where are the monstrous men with chests like barrels and moustaches like

the wings of eagles who strode across my child-hood's gaze twenty or thirty

years ago? Buried, I suppose, in the Flanders mud. In their place there are

these pale-faced boys who have been picked for their height and

consequently look like hop-poles in overcoats--the truth being that in

modern England a man over six feet high is usually skin and bone and not

much else. If the English physique has declined, this is no doubt partly

due to the fact that the Great War carefully selected the million best men

in England and slaughtered them, largely before they had had time to breed.

But the process must have begun earlier than that, and it must be due

ultimately to un-healthy ways of living, i.e. to industrialism. I don't

mean 'the habit of living in towns--probably the town is healthier than

the country, in many ways--but the modern industrial technique which $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

provides you with cheap substitutes for everything. We may find in the long

run that tinned food is a deadlier weapon than the machine gun.

It is unfortunate that the English working class--the English nation

generally, for that matter--are exception-ally ignorant about and

wasteful of food. I have pointed out elsewhere how civilized is a French

navvy's idea of a meal compared with an Englishman's, and I cannot believe

that you would ever see such wastage in a French house as you habitually

see in English ones. Of course, in the very poorest homes, where everybody

is unemployed, you don't see much actual waste, but those who can afford to

waste food often do so. I could give startling instances of this. Even the

Northern habit of baking one's own bread is slightly wasteful in itself,

because an overworked woman cannot bake more than once or, at most, twice a

week and it is impossible to tell beforehand how much bread will be wasted,

so that a certain amount generally has to be thrown away. The usual thing

is to bake six large loaves and twelve small ones at a time. All this is

part of the old, generous English attitude to life, and it is an amiable

quality, but a disastrous one at the present moment.

English working people everywhere, so far as I know, refuse brown

bread; it is usually impossible to buy whole-meal
bread in a working-class

district. They sometimes give the reason that brown bread is 'dirty'. I

suspect the real reason is that in the past brown bread has been confused

with black bread, which is traditionally associated with Popery and wooden $\,$

shoes. (They have plenty of Popery and wooden shoes in Lancashire. A pity

they haven't the black bread as well!) But the

English palate, especially

the working-class palate, now rejects good food almost automatically. The

number of people who prefer tinned peas and tinned fish to real peas and

real fish must be increasing every year, and plenty of people who could

afford real milk in their tea would much sooner have tinned milk--even

that dreadful tinned milk which is made of sugar and corn-flour and has

UNFIT FOR BABIES on the tin in huge letters. In some districts efforts are

now being made to teach the unemployed more about food-values and more

about the intelligent spending of money. When you hear of a thing like this

you feel yourself torn both ways. I have heard a Communist speaker on the

platform grow very angry about it. In London, he said, parties of Society

dames now have the cheek to walk into East End houses and give shopping-

lessons to the wives of the unemployed. He gave this as an instance of the

mentality of the English governing class. First you condemn a family to

to tell them how they are to spend their money. He was quite $\ensuremath{\operatorname{right}}{--}\ensuremath{\operatorname{I}}$

agree heartily. Yet all the same it is a pity that, merely for the lack of

a proper tradition, people should pour muck like tinned milk down their

throats and not even know that it is inferior to the product of the cow.

I doubt, however, whether the unemployed would ultimately benefit if $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

they learned to spend their money more economically. For it is only the

fact that they are not economical that keeps their

allowances so high. An

English-man on the P.A.C. gets fifteen shillings a week because fifteen

shillings is the smallest sum on which he can conceivably keep alive. If he

were, say, an Indian or Japanese coolie, who can live on rice and onions,

he wouldn't get fifteen shillings a week--he would be lucky if he got

fifteen shillings a month. Our unemployment allowances, miser-able though

they are, are framed to suit a population with very high standards and not

much notion of economy. If the unemployed learned to be better managers

they would be visibly better off, and I fancy it would not be long before $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

the dole was docked correspondingly.

There is one great mitigation of unemployment in the North, and that

is the cheapness of fuel. Anywhere in the coal areas the retail price of

coal is about one and sixpence a hundredweight; in
the South of England it

is about half a crown. Moreover, miners in work can usually buy coal direct

from the pit at eight or nine shillings a ton, and those who have a cellar

in their homes sometimes store a ton and sell it (illicitly, I suppose) to

those who are out of work. But apart from this there is immense and

systematic thieving of coal by the unemployed. I call it thieving because

technically it is that, though it does no harm to anybody. In the 'dirt' $\,$

that is sent up from the pits there is a certain amount of broken coal, and

unemployed people spend a lot of time in picking it out of the slag-heaps.

All day long over those strange grey mountains you see people wandering to

and fro with sacks and baskets across the sulphurous smoke (many slag-heaps

are on fire under the surface), prising out the tiny nuggets of coal which

are buried here and there. You meet men coming away, wheeling strange and

wonderful home-made bicycles--bicycles made of rusty parts picked off

refuse-tips, without saddles, without chains and almost always without

tyres--across which are slung bags containing perhaps half a

hundredweight of coal, fruit of half a day's searching. In times of

strikes, when everybody is short of fuel, the miners turn out with pick and

shovel and burrow into the slag-heaps, whence the hummocky appearance which

most slag-heaps have. During long strikes, in places where there are $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

outcrops of coal, they have sunk surface mines and carried them scores of yards into the earth.

In Wigan the competition among unemployed people for the waste coal

has become so fierce that it has led to an extraordinary custom called'

scrambling for the coal', which is well worth seeing. Indeed I rather

wonder that it has never been filmed. An unemployed miner took me to see it

one afternoon. We got to the place, a mountain range of ancient slag-heaps

with a railway running through the valley below. A couple of hundred ragged

men, each with a sack and coal-hammer strapped under his coat-tails, were

waiting on the 'broo'. When the dirt comes up-from the pit it is loaded on

to trucks and an engine runs these to the top of another slag-heap a

quarter of a mile away and there leaves them. The

process of 'scrambling

for the coal' consists in getting on to the train while it is moving; any

truck which you have succeeded in boarding while it is in motion counts as

'your' truck. Presently the train hove in sight. With a wild yell a hundred

men dashed down the slope to catch her as she rounded the bend. Even at the

bend the train was making twenty miles an hour. The men hurled themselves

upon it, caught hold of the rings at the rear of the trucks and hoisted

themselves up by way of the bumpers, five or ten of them on each truck. The $\ensuremath{\mathsf{E}}$

driver took no notice, He drove up to the top of the slag-heap, uncoupled

the trucks, and ran the engine back to the pit, presently returning with a

fresh string of trucks. There was the same wild rush of ragged figures as

before. In the end only about fifty men had failed to get on to either train.

We walked up to the top of the slag-heap. The men were shovelling the

dirt out of the trucks, while down below their wives and children were

kneeling, swiftly scrabbling with their hands in the damp dirt and picking

out lumps of coal the size of an egg or smaller. You would see a woman

pounce on a tiny fragment of stuff, wipe it on her apron, scrutinize it to

make sure it was coal, and pop it jealously into her sack. Of course, when

you are boarding a truck you don't know beforehand what is in it; it may be

actual 'dirt' from the roads or it may merely be shale from the roofing. If $\ensuremath{\,}^{}$

it is a shale truck there will be no coal in it, but there occurs among the

shale another inflammable rock called cannel, which looks very like

ordinary shale but is slightly darker and is known by splitting in parallel

lines, like slate. It makes tolerable fuel, not good enough to be

commercially valuable, but good enough to be eagerly sought after by the $\,$

unemployed. The miners on the shale trucks were picking out the cannel and

splitting it up with their hammers. Down at the bottom of the 'broo' the

people who had failed to get on to either train were gleaning the tiny

chips of coal that came rolling down from above--fragments no bigger than

a hazel-nut, these, but the people were glad enough to get them.

We stayed there till the train was empty. In a couple of hours the

people had picked the dirt over to the last grain.

They slung their sacks

over shoulder or bicycle, and started on the two-mile trudge back to Wigan.

Most of the families had gathered about half a hundredweight of coal or

carmel, so that between them they must have stolen five or ten tons of $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

fuel. This business of robbing the dirt trains takes place every day in

Wigan, at any rate in winter, and at more collieries than one. It is of

course extremely dangerous. No one was hurt the afternoon I was there, but

a man had had both his legs cut off a few weeks earlier, and another man

lost several fingers a week later. Technically it is stealing but, as

everybody knows, if the coal were not stolen it would simply be wasted. Now

and again, for form's sake, the colliery companies prosecute somebody for

coal-picking, and in that morning's issue of the local paper there was a paragraph saying that two men had been fined ten shillings. But no notice is taken of the prosecutions—in fact, one of the men

named in the paper

was there that afternoon—and the coal-pickers subscribe among themselves

to pay the fines. The thing is taken for granted. Everyone knows that the

unemployed have got to get fuel somehow. So every afternoon several hundred

men risk their necks and several hundred women scrabble in the mud for

hours--and all for half a hundredweight of inferior fuel, value ninepence.

That scene stays in my mind as one of my pictures of Lancashire: the

 $\mbox{\tt dumpy},$ shawled women, with their sacking aprons and their heavy black

clogs, kneeling in the cindery mud and the bitter wind, searching eagerly

for tiny chips of coal. They are glad enough to do it. In winter they are

desperate for fuel; it is more important almost than food. Meanwhile all

round, as far as the eye can see, are the slag-heaps and hoisting gear of

collieries, and not one of those collieries can sell all the coal it is

capable of producing. This ought to appeal to Major Douglas.

7

As you travel northward your eye, accustomed to the South or East, does not notice much difference until you are beyond Birmingham. In Coventry you

might as well be in Finsbury Park, and the Bull Ring in Birmingham is not

unlike Norwich Market, and between all the towns of the Midlands there

stretches a villa-civilization indistinguishable from that of the South. It

is only when you get a little further north, to the pottery towns and

beyond, that you begin to encounter the real ugliness of industrialism--

an ugliness so frightful and so arresting that you are obliged, as it were,

to come to terms with it.

A slag-heap is at best a hideous thing, because it is so planless and

functionless. It is something just dumped on the earth, like the emptying

of a giant's dust-bin. On the outskirts of the mining towns there are

frightful landscapes where your horizon is ringed completely round by

jagged grey mountains, and underfoot is mud and ashes and over-head the $\,$

steel cables where tubs of dirt travel slowly across miles of country.

Often the slag-heaps are on fire, and at night you can see the red rivulets

of fire winding this way and that, and also the slow-moving blue flames of

sulphur, which always seem on the point of expiring and always spring out

again. Even when a slag-heap sinks, as it does ultimately, only an evil

brown grass grows on it, and it retains its hummocky surface. One in the

slums of Wigan, used as a playground, looks like a choppy sea suddenly

frozen; 'the flock mattress', it is called locally.
Even centuries hence

when the plough drives over the places where coal was once mined , the sites

of ancient slag-heaps will still be distinguishable

from an aeroplane.

I remember a winter afternoon in the dreadful environs of Wigan. All

round was the lunar landscape of slag-heaps, and to the north, through the

passes, as it were, between the mountains of slag, you could see the

factory chimneys sending out their plumes of smoke. The canal path was a

mixture of cinders and frozen mud, criss-crossed by the imprints of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

innumerable clogs, and all round, as far as the slag-heaps in the distance,

stretched the 'flashes'--pools of stagnant water that had seeped into the

hollows caused by the subsidence of ancient pits. It was horribly cold. The

'flashes' were covered with ice the colour of raw umber, the bargemen were

muffled to the eyes in sacks, the lock gates wore beards of ice. It seemed

a world from which vegetation had been banished; nothing existed except

smoke, shale, ice, mud, ashes, and foul water. But even Wigan is beautiful

compared with Sheffield. Sheffield, I suppose, could justly claim to be

called the ugliest town in the Old World: its inhabitants, who want it to

be pre-eminent in everything, very likely do make that claim for it. It has

a population of half a million and it contains fewer decent buildings than

the average East Anglian village of five hundred. And the stench! If at

rare moments you stop smelling sulphur it is because you have begun

smelling gas. Even the shallow river that runs through the town is-usually $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) ^{2}$

bright yellow with some chemical or other. Once I halted in the street and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

counted the factory chimneys I could see; there were

thirty-three of them,

but there would have been far more if the air had not been obscured by

smoke. One scene especially lingers in my mind. A frightful patch of waste

ground (somehow, up there, a patch of waste ground attains a squalor that

would be impossible even in London) trampled bare of grass and littered

with newspapers and old saucepans. To the right an isolated row of gaunt

four-roomed houses, dark red, blackened by smoke. To the left an $\,$

interminable vista of factory chimneys, chimney beyond chimney, fading away

into a dim blackish haze. Behind me a railway embankment made of the slag

from furnaces. In front, across the patch of waste ground, a cubical

building of red and yellow brick, with the sign 'Thomas Grocock, Haulage Contractor'.

At night, when you cannot see the hideous shapes of the houses and the

blackness of everything, a town like Sheffield assumes a kind of sinister

magnificence. Sometimes the drifts of smoke are rosy with sulphur, and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

serrated flames, like circular saws, squeeze themselves out from beneath

the cowls of the foundry chimneys. Through the open doors of foundries you

see fiery serpents of iron being hauled to and fro by redlit boys, and you $\,$

hear the whizz and thump of steam hammers and the scream of the iron under $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

the blow. The pottery towns are almost equally ugly in a pettier way. Right

in among the rows of tiny blackened houses, part of the street as it were,

are the 'pot banks'--conical brick chimneys like gigantic burgundy

bottles buried in the soil and belching their smoke almost in your face.

You come upon monstrous clay chasms hundreds of feet across and almost as

deep, with little rusty tubs creeping on chain railways up one side, and on

the other workmen clinging like samphire-gatherers and cutting into the

face of the cliff with their picks. I passed that way in snowy weather, and

even the snow was black. The best thing one can say for the pottery towns

is that they are fairly small and stop abruptly. Less than ten miles away

you can stand in un-defiled country, on the almost naked hills, and the

pottery towns are only a smudge in the distance.

When you contemplate such ugliness as this, there are two questions

that strike you. First, is it inevitable? Secondly, does it matter?

I do not believe that there is anything inherently and unavoidably

ugly about industrialism. A factory or even a gasworks is not obliged of

its own nature to be ugly, any more than a palace or a dog-kennel or a

cathedral. It all depends on the architectural tradition of the period. The $\,$

industrial towns of the North are ugly because they happen to have been

built at a time when modem methods of

steel-construction and smoke-

abatement were unknown, and when everyone was too busy making money to

think about anything else. They go on being ugly largely because the

Northerners have got used to that kind of thing and do not notice it. Many $\,$

of the people in Sheffield or Manchester, if they smelled the air along the

Cornish cliffs, would probably declare that it had no taste in it. But

since the war, industry has tended to shift southward and in doing so has

grown almost comely. The typical post-war factory is not a gaunt barrack or

an awful chaos of blackness and belching chimneys; it is a glittering white

structure of concrete, glass, and steel, surrounded by green lawns and beds

of tulips. Look at the factories you pass as you travel out of London on

the G.W.R.; they may not be aesthetic triumphs but certainly they are not

ugly in the same way as the Sheffield gasworks. But in any case, though the

ugliness of industrialism is the most obvious thing about it and the thing

every newcomer exclaims against, I doubt whether it is centrally important.

And perhaps it is not even desirable, industrialism being what it is, that

it should leam to disguise itself as something else. As Mr Aldous Huxley

has truly remarked, a dark Satanic mill ought to look like a dark Satanic

mill and not like the temple of mysterious and splendid gods. Moreover,

even in the worst of the industrial towns one sees a great deal that is not

ugly in the narrow aesthetic sense. A belching chimney or a stinking slum

is repulsive chiefly because it implies warped lives and ailing children.

Look at it from a purely aesthetic standpoint and it may, have a certain

macabre appeal. I find that anything outrageously strange generally ends by

fascinating me even when I abominate it. The landscapes of Burma, which,

when I was among them, so appalled me as to assume the qualities of $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\}$

nightmare, afterwards stayed so hauntingly in my mind

that I was obliged to

write a novel about them to get rid of them. (In all novels about the East

the scenery is the real subject-matter.) It would probably be quite easy to

extract a sort of beauty, as Arnold Bennett did, from the blackness of the

industrial towns; one can easily imagine Baudelaire, for instance, writing

a poem about a slag-heap. But the beauty or ugliness of industrialism

hardly matters. Its real evil lies far deeper and is quite uneradicable. It

is important to remember this, because there is always a temptation to

think that industrialism is harmless so long as it is clean and orderly.

But when you go to the industrial North you are conscious, quite apart $\,$

from the unfamiliar scenery, of entering a strange country. This is partly

because of certain real differences which do exist, but still more because

of the North-South antithesis which has been rubbed into us for such a long

time past. There exists in England a curious cult of Northemness, sort of

Northern snobbishness. A Yorkshireman in the South will always take care to

let you know that he regards you as an inferior. If you ask him why, he

will explain that it is only in the North that life is 'real' life, that

the industrial work done in the North is the only 'real' work, that the

North is inhabited by 'real' people, the South merely by rentiers and their

parasites. The Northerner has 'grit', he is grim,
'dour', plucky, warm-

hearted, and democratic; the Southerner is snobbish, effeminate, and lazy

--that at any rate is the theory. Hence the

Southerner goes north, at any rate for the first time, with the vague inferiority-complex of a civilized man venturing among savages, while the Yorkshireman, like the Scotchman, comes to London in the spirit of a barbarian out for loot. And feelings of this kind, which are the result of tradition, are not affected by visible facts. Just as an Englishman five feet four inches high and twenty-nine inches round the chest feels that as an Englishman he is the physical superior of Camera (Camera being a Dago), so also with the Northerner and the Southerner. I remember a weedy little Yorkshireman, who would almost certainly have run away if a fox-terrier had snapped at him, telling me that in the South of England he felt 'like a wild invader'. But the cult is often adopted by people who are not by birth Northerners themselves. A year or two ago a friend of mine, brought up in the South but now living in the

beautiful village. He glanced disapprovingly at the cottages and said:

North, was driving me through Suffolk in a car. We

passed through a rather

'Of course most of the villages in Yorkshire are hideous; but the Yorkshiremen are splendid chaps. Down here it's just the other way about-- beautiful villages and rotten people. All the people in those cottages there are worthless, absolutely worthless.'

I could not help inquiring whether he happened to know anybody in that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

village. No, he did not know them; but because this was East Anglia they

were obviously worthless. Another friend of mine, again a Southerner by

birth, loses no opportunity of praising the North to the detriment of the

South. Here is an extract from one of his letters to $\ensuremath{\text{me}}\xspace$:

I am in Clitheroe, Lanes. ... I think running water is much more

attractive in moor and mountain country than in the fat and sluggish South.

'The smug and silver Trent,' Shakespeare says; and the South-er the smugger, I say.

Here you have an interesting example of the Northern cult. Not only

are you and I and everyone else in the South of England written off as 'fat

and sluggish', but even water when it gets north of a certain latitude,

ceases to be ${\rm H2O}$ and becomes something mystically superior. But the

interest of this passage is that its writer is an extremely intelligent man

of 'advanced' opinions who would have nothing but con-tempt for nationalism

in its ordinary form. Put to him some such proposition as 'One Britisher is

worth three foreigners', and he would repudiate it with horror. But when it

is a question of North versus South, he is quite ready to generalize. All

nationalistic distinctions--all claims to be better than somebody else

because you have a different-shaped skull or speak a different dialect--

are entirely spurious, but they are important so long as people believe in

them. There is no doubt about the Englishman's inbred conviction that those

who live to the south of him are his inferiors; even our foreign policy is

governed by it to some extent. I think, therefore, that it is worth

pointing out when and why it came into being.

When nationalism first became a religion, the English looked at the

 $\ensuremath{\mathsf{map}},$ and, noticing that their island lay very high in the Northern

Hemisphere, evolved the pleasing theory that the further north you live the

more virtuous you become. The histories I was given when I was a little boy

generally started off by explaining in the naivest way that a cold climate

made people energetic while a hot one made them lazy, and hence the defeat

of the Spanish Armada. This nonsense about the superior energy of the

English (actually the laziest people in Europe) has been current for at

least a hundred years. 'Better is it for us', writes a Quarterly Reviewer

of 1827, 'to be condemned to labour for our country's good than to

luxuriate amid olives, vines, and vices.' 'Olives,
vines, and vices' sums

up the normal English attitude towards the Latin races. In the mythology of

Garlyle, Creasey, etc., the Northerner ('Teutonic',
later 'Nordic') is

pictured as a hefty, vigorous chap with blond moustaches and pure morals,

while the Southerner is sly, cowardly, and licentious. This theory was

never pushed to its logical end, which would have meant assuming that the

finest people in the world were the Eskimos, but it did involve admitting

that the people who lived to the north of us were

superior to ourselves.

Hence, partly, the cult of Scotland and of Scotch things which has so

deeply marked English life during the past fifty years. But it was the

industrialization of the North that gave the North-South antithesis its

peculiar slant. Until comparatively recently the northern part of England

was the backward and feudal part, and such industry as existed was

concentrated in London and the South-East. In the Civil War for instance,

roughly speaking a war of money versus feudalism, the North and West were $\,$

for the King and the South and East for the Parliament. But with the $\,$

increasing use of coal industry passed to the North, and there grew up a $\,$

new type of man, the self-made Northern business man--the Mr Rouncewell

and Mr Bounderby of Dickens. The Northern business $\mbox{\tt man, with his hateful}$

'get on or get out' philosophy, was the dominant figure of the nineteenth

century, and as a sort of tyrannical corpse he rules us still. This is the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{T}}$

type edified by Arnold Bennett--the type who starts off with half a crown

and ends up with fifty thousand pounds, and whose chief pride is to be an

even greater boor after he has made his money than before. On analysis his

sole virtue turns out to be a talent for making money. We were bidden to

admire him because though he might be narrow-minded, sordid, ignorant,

grasping, and uncouth, he had 'grit', he 'got on'; in other words, he knew how to make money.

This kind of cant is nowadays a pure anachronism, for the Northern

business man is no longer prosperous. But traditions are not killed by

facts, and the tradition of Northern' grit' lingers. It is still dimly felt

that a Northerner will 'get on', i.e. make money, where a Southerner will

fail. At the back of the mind of every Yorkshireman and every Scotchman who $\,$

who starts off by selling newspapers and ends up as Lord Mayor. And that,

really, is at the bottom of his bumptiousness. But where one can make a

great mistake is in imagining that this feeling extends to the genuine

working class. When I first went to Yorkshire, some years ago, I imagined

that I was going to a country of boors. I was used to the London $\,$

Yorkshireman with his interminable harangues and his pride in the sup-posed

raciness of his dialect (' "A stitch in time saves nine", as we say in the

West Riding'), and I expected to meet with a good deal of rudeness. But I $\;$

met with nothing of the kind, and least of all among the miners. Indeed the

Lancashire and Yorkshire miners treated me with a kindness and courtesy

that were even embarrassing; for if there is one type of man to whom $\ensuremath{\text{I}}$ do

feel myself inferior, it is a coal-miner. Certainly no one showed any sign

of despising me for coming from a different part of the country. This has

its importance when one remembers that the English regional snobberies are

nationalism in miniature; for it suggests that place-snobbery is not a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

working-class characteristic.

There is nevertheless a real difference between North

and South, and

there is at least a tinge of truth in that picture of Southern England as

one enormous Brighton inhabited by lounge-lizards.

For climatic reasons the

parasitic divi-dend-drawing class tend to settle in the South. In a

Lancashire cotton-town you could probably go for months on end without once

hearing an 'educated' accent, whereas there can hardly be a town in the

South of England where you could throw a brick without hitting the niece of

a bishop. Consequently, with no petty gentry to set the pace, the

bourgeoisification of the working class, though it is taking place in the

North, is taking place more slowly. All the Northern accents, for instance, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

persist strongly, while the Southern ones are collapsing before the movies

and the B.B.C. Hence your 'educated' accent stamps you rather as a

foreigner than as a chunk of the petty gentry; and this is an immense

advantage, for it makes it much easier to get into contact with the working class.

But is it ever possible to be really intimate with the working class?

I shall have to discuss that later; I will only say here that I do not

think it is possible. But undoubtedly it is easier in the North than it

would be in the South to meet working-class people on approximately equal

terms. It is fairly easy to live in a miner's house and be accepted as one

of the family; with, say, a farm labourer in the Southern counties it

probably would be impossible. I have seen just enough of the working class

to avoid idealizing them, but I do know that you can leam a great deal in a

working-class home, if only you can get there. The essential point is that

your middle-class ideals and prejudices are tested by contact with others

which are not necessarily better but are certainly different.

Take for instance the different attitude towards the family. ${\tt A}$

working-class family hangs together as a middle-class one does, but the

relationship is far less tyrannical. A working man has not that deadly

weight of family prestige hanging round his neck like a millstone. I have

pointed out earlier that a middle-class person goes utterly to pieces under

the influence of poverty; and this is generally due to the behaviour of his

family--to the fact that he has scores of relations nagging and badgering

him night and day for failing to 'get on'. The fact that the working class

know how to combine and the middle class don't is probably due to their

different conceptions of family loyalty. You cannot have an effective trade

union of middle-class workers, be-cause in times of strikes almost every

middle-class wife would be egging her husband on to blackleg and get the

other fellow's job. Another working-class

characteristic, disconcerting at

first, is their plain-spokenness towards anyone they regard as an equal. If

you offer a working man something he doesn't want, he tells you that he

doesn't want it; a middle-class person would accept
it to avoid giving

offence. And again, take the working-class attitude towards 'education'.

How different it is from ours, and how immensely sounder! Working people

often have a vague reverence for learning in others, but where 'education'

touches their own lives they see through it and reject it by a healthy

instinct. The time was when I used to lament over quite imaginary pictures

of lads of fourteen dragged protesting from their lessons and set to work

at dismal jobs. It seemed to me dreadful that the doom of a 'job' should

descend upon anyone at fourteen. Of course I know now that there is not one

working-class boy in a thousand who does not pine for the day when he will

leave school. He wants to be doing real work, not wasting his time on

ridiculous rubbish like history and geography. To the working class, the

notion of staying at school till you are nearly grown-up seems merely

contemptible and unmanly. The idea of a great big boy of eighteen, who

ought to be bringing a pound a week home to his parents, going to school in

a ridiculous uniform and even being caned for not doing his lessons! Just

fancy a working-class boy of eighteen allowing himself to be caned! He is a

man when the other is still a baby. Ernest Pontifex, in Samuel Butler's Way

of All Flesh, after he had had a few glimpses of real life, looked back on

his public school and university education and found it a 'sickly,

debilitating debauch'. There is much in middle-class life that looks sickly

and debilitating when you see it from a working-class angle.

In a working-class home--I am not thinking at the moment of the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

unemployed, but of comparatively prosperous homes--you breathe a warm,

decent, deeply human atmosphere which it is not so easy to find elsewhere.

I should say that a manual worker, if he is in steady work and drawing good

wages--an 'if which gets bigger and bigger--has a better chance of

being happy than an 'educated' man. His home life seems to fall more

naturally into a sane and comely shape. I have often been struck by the

peculiar easy completeness, the perfect symmetry as it were, of a working-

class interior at its best. Especially on winter evenings after tea, when

the fire glows in the open range and dances mirrored in the steel fender,

when Father, in shirt-sleeves, sits in the rocking chair at one side of the

fire reading the racing finals, and Mother sits on the other with her

sewing, and the children are happy with a pennorth of mint humbugs, and the

dog lolls roasting himself on the rag mat--it is a good place to be in,

provided that you can be not only in it but sufficiently of it to be taken for granted.

This scene is still reduplicated in a majority of English homes,

though not in so many as before the war. Its happiness depends mainly upon

one question--whether Father is in work. But notice that the picture I

have called up, of a working-class family sitting round the coal fire after

kippers and strong tea, belongs only to our own $\ensuremath{\mathsf{moment}}$ of time and could

not belong either to the future or the past. Skip forward two hundred years

into the Utopian future, and the scene is totally

different. Hardly one of

the things I have imagined will still be there. In that age when there is

no manual labour and everyone is 'educated', it is hardly likely that

Father will still be a rough man with enlarged hands who likes to sit in

shirt-sleeves and says 'Ah wur coomin' oop street'. And there won't be a

coal fire in the grate, only some kind of invisible heater. The furniture

will be made of rubber, glass, and steel. If there are still such things as

evening papers there will certainly be no racing news in them, for gambling

will be meaningless in a world where there is no poverty and the horse will

have vanished from the face of the earth. Dogs, too, will have been sup-

pressed on grounds of hygiene. And there won't be so many children, either,

if the birth-controllers have their way. But move backwards into the Middle

Ages and you are in a world almost equally foreign. A windowless hut, a

wood fire which smokes in your face because there is no chimney, mouldy

bread, 'Poor John', lice, scurvy, a yearly
child-birth and a yearly child-

death, and the priest terrifying you with tales of Hell.

Curiously enough it is not the triumphs of modem engineering, nor the

radio, nor the cinematograph, nor the five thousand novels which are

published yearly, nor the crowds at Ascot and the Eton and Harrow match,

but the memory of working-class interiors--especially as I sometimes saw

them in my childhood before the war, when England was still prosperous--

that reminds me that our age has not been altogether

PART TWO

8

The road from Mandalay to Wigan is a long one and the reasons for taking it are not immediately clear.

In the earlier chapters of this book I have given a rather fragmentary

account of various things I saw in the coal areas of Lancashire and

Yorkshire. I went there partly because I wanted to see what mass-

unemployment is like at its worst, partly in order to see the most typical

section of the English working class at close quarters. This was necessary

to me as part of my approach to Socialism, for before you can be sure

whether you are genuinely in favour of Socialism, you have got to decide

whether things at present are tolerable or not tolerable, and you have got

to take up a definite attitude on the terribly difficult issue of class.

Here I shall have to digress and explain how $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ own attitude towards the

class question was developed. Obviously this involves writing a certain

amount of autobiography, and I would not do it if I did not think that I am $\,$

sufficiently typical of my class, or rather sub-caste, to have a certain symptomatic importance.

I was born into what you might describe as the

lower-upper-middle

class. The upper-middle class, which had its heyday in the eighties and

nineties, with Kipling as its poet laureate, was a sort of mound of

wreckage left behind when the tide of Victorian prosperity receded. Or

perhaps it would be better to change the metaphor and describe it not as a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

mound but as a layer—the layer of society lying between L2000 and L300 a $\,$

year: my own family was not far from the bottom. You notice that I define

it in terms of money, because that is always the quickest way of making

yourself understood. Nevertheless, the essential point about the English

class-system is that it is not entirely explicable in terms of money.

Roughly speaking it is a money-stratification, but it is also

interpenetrated by a sort of shadowy caste-system; rather like a jerrybuilt

modem bungalow haunted by medieval ghosts. Hence the fact that the upper-

middle class extends or extended to incomes as low as L300 a year--to

incomes, that is, much lower than those of merely middle-class people with

no social pretensions. Probably there are countries where you can predict \boldsymbol{a}

man's opinions from his income, but it is never quite safe to do so in

England; you have always got to take his traditions into consideration as

well. A naval officer and his grocer very likely have the same income, but

they are not equivalent persons and they would only be on the same side in

very large issues such as a war or a general strike--possibly not even then.

Of course it is obvious now that the upper-middle class is done for.

In every country town in Southern England, not to mention the dreary wastes

of Kensington and Earl's Court, those who knew it in the days of its glory

are dying, vaguely embittered by a world which has not behaved as it ought.

I never open one of Kipling's books or go into one of the huge dull shops

which were once the favourite haunt of the upper-middle class, without

thinking 'Change and decay in all around I see'. But before the war the

upper-middle class, though already none too prosperous, still felt sure of

itself. Before the war you were either a gentleman or not a gentleman, and

if you were a gentleman you struggled to behave as such, whatever your

income might be. Between those with L400 a year and those with L2000 or $\,$

even L1000 a year there was a great gulf fixed, but it was a gulf which

those with L400 a year did their best to ignore. Probably the $\,$

distinguishing mark of the upper-middle class was that its traditions were

not to any extent commercial, but mainly military, official, and professional.

People in this class owned no land, but they felt that they were

landowners in the sight of God and kept up a semi-aristocratic outlook by

going into the professions and the fighting services rather than into

trade. Small boys used to count the plum stones on their plates and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

foretell their destiny by chanting, 'Army, Navy, Church, Medicine, Law';

and even of these 'Medicine' was faintly inferior to

the others and only

put in for the sake of symmetry. To belong to this class when you were at

gentility was almost purely theoretical. You lived, so to speak, at two

levels simultaneously. Theoretically you knew all about servants and how to

tip them, although in practice you had one, at most, two resident servants.

Theoretically you knew how to wear your clothes and how to order a dinner,

although in practice you could never afford to go to a decent tailor or a

decent restaurant. Theoretically you knew how to shoot and ride, although

in practice you had no horses to ride and not an inch of ground to shoot

over. It was this that explained the attraction of India (more recently

Kenya, Nigeria, etc.) for the lower-upper-middle class. The people who went

there as soldiers and officials did not go there to make money, for a

soldier or an official does not want money; they went there because in

India, with cheap horses, free shooting, and hordes of black servants, it

was so easy to play at being a gentleman.

In the kind of shabby-genteel family that I am talking about there is

far more consciousness of poverty than in any working-class family above

the level of the dole. Rent and clothes and school-bills are an unending

nightmare, and every luxury, even a glass of beer, is an unwarrantable

extravagance. Practically the whole family income goes in keeping up

appearances. It is obvious that people of this kind are in an anomalous

position, and one might 'be tempted to write them off as mere exceptions

and therefore unimportant. Actually, however, they are or were fairly

numerous. Most clergymen and schoolmasters, for instance, nearly all Anglo-

Indian officials, a sprinkling of soldiers and sailors, and a fair number

of professional men and artists, fall into this category. But the real

importance of this class is that they are the shock-absorbers of the

bourgeoisie. The real bourgeoisie, those in the L2000 a year class and

over, have their money as a thick layer of padding between themselves and

the class they plunder; in so far as they are aware of the Lower Orders at

all they are aware of them as employees, servants, and tradesmen. But it is

quite different for the poor devils lower down who are struggling to live

genteel lives on what are virtually working-class incomes. These last are

forced into close and, in a sense, intimate contact with the working class,

and I suspect it is from them that the traditional upper-class attitude

towards 'common' people is derived.

And what is this attitude? An attitude of sniggering superiority

punctuated by bursts of vicious hatred. Look at any number of Punch during

the. past thirty years. You will find it everywhere taken for granted that

a working-class person, as such, is a figure of fun, except at odd moments

when he shows signs of being too prosperous, whereupon he ceases to be a

figure of fun and becomes a demon. It is no use wasting breath in

denouncing this attitude. It is better to consider

how it has arisen, and

to do that one has got to realize what the working classes look like to

those who live among them but have different habits and traditions.

A shabby genteel family is in much the same position as a family of

'poor whites' living in a street where everyone else is a Negro. In such

circumstances you have got to cling to your gentility because it is the

only thing you have; and meanwhile you are hated for your stuck-up-ness and

very young, not much more than six, when I first became aware of class-

distinctions. Before that age my chief heroes had generally been working-

class people, because they always seemed to do such interesting things,

such as being fishermen and blacksmiths and bricklayers. I remember the

farm hands on a farm in Cornwall who used to let me ride on the drill when

they were sowing turnips and would sometimes catch the ewes and milk them

to give me a drink; and the workmen building the new house next door, who

let me play with the wet mortar and from whom I first learned the word $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

'b----'; and the plumber up the road with whose children I used to go out

bird-nesting. But it was not long before I was forbidden to play with the

plumber's children; they were 'common' and I was told to keep away from

them. This was snobbish, if you like, but it was also necessary, for

middle-class people can-not afford to let their children grow up with

vulgar accents. So, very early, the working class

ceased to be a race of

friendly and wonderful beings and became a race of enemies. We realized

that they hated us, but we could never understand why, and naturally we set

it down to pure, vicious malignity. To me in my early boyhood, to nearly

all children of families like mine, 'common' people seemed almost sub-

human. They had coarse faces, hideous accents, and gross manners, they

hated everyone who was not like themselves, and if they got half a chance

they would insult you in brutal ways. That was our view of them, and though

it was false it was understandable. For one must remember that before the

war there was much more overt class-hatred in England than there is now. In

those days you were quite likely to be insulted simply for looking like a

member of the upper classes; nowadays, on the other hand, you are more

likely to be fawned upon. Anyone over thirty can remember the time when it

was impossible for a well-dressed person to walk through a slum street

without being hooted at. Whole quarters of big towns were considered unsafe

because of' hooligans' (now almost an extinct type), and the London gutter-

boy everywhere, with his loud voice and lack of intellectual scruples,

could make life a misery for people who considered it beneath their dignity

to answer back. A recurrent terror of my holidays, when I was a small boy,

was the gangs of' cads' who were liable to set upon you five or ten to one.

In term time, on the other hand, it was we who were in the majority and the

'cads' who were oppressed; I remember a couple of savage mass-battles in

the cold winter of 1916-17. And this tradition of open hostility between

upper and lower class had apparently been the same for at least a century

past. A typical joke in Punch in the sixties is a picture of a small,

nervous-looking gentleman riding through a slum street and a crowd of

street-boys closing in on him with shouts ''Ere comes a swell! Let's

frighten 'is 'oss!' Just fancy the street boys trying to frighten his horse

now! They would be much likelier to hang round him in vague hopes of a tip.

During the past dozen years the English working class have grown servile

with a rather horrifying rapidity. It was bound to happen, for the

frightful weapon of unemployment has cowed them.

Before the war their

economic position was comparatively strong, for though there was no dole to

fall back upon, there was not much unemployment, and the power of the boss $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

class was not so obvious as it is now. A man did not see ruin staring $\mathop{\text{\rm him}}\nolimits$

in the face every time he cheeked a 'toff', and naturally he did cheek a

'toff' whenever it seemed safe to do so. ${\tt G.\ J.}$

Renier, in his book on Oscar

Wilde, points out that the strange, obscene burst of popular fury which

followed the Wilde trial was essentially social in character. The 'London

mob had caught a member of the upper classes on the hop, and they took care

to keep him hopping. All this was natural and even proper. If you treat

people as the English working class have been treated during the past two $\,$

centuries, you must expect them to resent it. On the other hand the

children of shabby-genteel families could not be

blamed if they grew up with a hatred of the working class, typified for them by prowling gangs of 'cads'.

But there was another and more serious difficulty. Here you come to the real secret of class distinctions in the West--the real reason why a European of bourgeois upbringing, even when he calls himself a Communist, cannot without a hard effort think of a working man as his equal. It is summed up in four frightful words which people nowadays are chary of uttering, but which were bandied about quite freely in my childhood. The

words were: The lower classes smell.

That was what we were taught--the lower classes smell. And here, obviously, you are at an impassable barrier. For no feeling of like or dislike is quite so fundamental as a physical feeling. Race-hatred, religious hatred, differences of education, of temperament, of intellect, even differences of moral code, can be got over; but physical repulsion can-not. You can have an affection for a murderer or a sodomite, but you cannot have an affection for a man whose breath stinks--habitually stinks, I mean. However well you may wish him, however much you may admire his mind and character, if his breath stinks he is horrible and in your heart of hearts you will hate him. It may not greatly matter if the average middle-class person is brought up to believe that the working classes are ignorant, lazy, drunken, boorish, and dishonest; it is when he is brought

up to believe that they are dirty that the harm is done. And in $\ensuremath{\mathsf{m}} \ensuremath{\mathsf{y}}$

childhood we were brought up to believe that they were dirty. Very early in

life you acquired the idea that there was something subtly repulsive about

a working-class body; you would not get nearer to it than you could help.

You watched a great sweaty navvy walking down the road with his pick over

his shoulder; you looked at his discoloured shirt and his corduroy trousers

stiff with the dirt of a decade; you thought of those nests and layers of

greasy rags below, and, under all, the unwashed body, brown all over (that

was how I used to imagine it), with its strong, bacon-like reek. You

watched a tramp taking off his boots in a ditch--ugh! It did not

seriously occur to you that the tramp might not enjoy having black feet.

And even 'lower-class' people whom you knew to be quite clean--servants,

for instance--were faintly unappetizing. The smell of their sweat, the

very texture of their skins, were mysteriously different from yours.

Everyone who has grown up pronouncing his aitches and in a house with

a bathroom and one servant is likely to have grown up with these feelings;

hence the chasmic, impassable quality of class-distinctions in the West. It

is queer how seldom this is admitted. At the moment $\ensuremath{\mathtt{I}}$ can think of only one

book where it is set forth without humbug, and that is ${\tt Mr}$ Somerset

Maugham's On a Chinese Screen. Mr Maugham describes a high Chinese official

arriving at a wayside inn and blustering and calling everybody names in

order to impress upon them that he is a supreme dignitary and they are only

worms. Five minutes later, having asserted his dignity in the way he thinks

proper, he is eating his dinner in perfect amity with the baggage coolies.

As an official he feels that he has got to make his presence felt, but he

has no feeling that the coolies are of different clay from himself. I have

observed countless similar scenes in Burma. Among Mongolians--among all

Asiatics, for all I know--there is a sort of natural equality, an easy

intimacy between man and man, which is simply
unthinkable in the West. Mr
Maugham adds:

In the West we are divided from our fellows by our sense of smell.

The working man is our master, inclined to rule us with an iron hand, but

it cannot be denied that he stinks: none can wonder at it, for a bath in

the dawn when you have to hurry to your work before the factory bell rings

is no pleasant thing, nor 'does heavy labour tend to sweetness; and you do $\,$

not change your linen more than you can help when the week's washing must

be done by a sharp-tongued wife. I do not blame the working man because he

stinks, but stink he does. It makes social intercourse difficult to persons

of sensitive nostril. The matutinal tub divides the classes more

effectually than birth, wealth, or education.

Meanwhile, do the 'lower classes' smell? Of course, as a whole, they are dirtier than the upper classes. They are bound to

be, considering the

circumstances in which they live, for even at this late date less than half

the houses in England have bathrooms. Besides, the habit of washing

yourself all over every day is a very recent one in Europe, and the working

classes are generally more conservative than the bourgeoisie. But the

English are growing visibly cleaner, and we may hope that in a hundred

years they will be almost as clean as the Japanese.

It is a pity that those

who idealize the working class so often think it necessary to praise every

working-class characteristic and therefore to pretend that dirtiness is

somehow meritorious in itself. Here, curiously enough, the Socialist and

the sentimental democratic Catholic of the type of Chesterton sometimes

join hands; both will tell you that dirtiness is healthy and 'natural' and

cleanliness is a mere fad or at best a

luxury. [According to Chesterton,

dirtiness is merely a kind of 'discomfort' and therefore ranks as

self-mortification. Unfortunately, the discomfort of dirtiness is chiefly

suffered by other people. It is not really very uncomfortable to be

dirty--not nearly so uncomfortable as having a cold bath on a winter

morning.] They seem not to see that they are merely giving colour

to the notion that working-class people are dirty from choice and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

not from necessity. Actually, people who have access to a bath will

generally use it. But the essential thing is that middle-class people

believe that the working class are dirty--you see from the passage

quoted above that Mr Maugham himself believes it--and, what is

worse, that they are some-how inherently dirty. As a child, one of the most

dreadful things I could imagine was to drink out of a bottle after a navvy.

Once when I was thirteen, I was in a train coming from a market town, and

the third-class carriage was packed full of shepherds and pig-men who had

been selling their beasts. Somebody produced a quart bottle of beer and

passed it round; it travelled from mouth to mouth to mouth, everyone taking

a swig. I cannot describe the horror I felt as that bottle worked its way

towards me. If I drank from it after all those lower-class male mouths I

felt certain I should vomit; on the other hand, if they offered it to me I

dared not refuse for fear of offending them--you see here how the middle-

class squeamishness works both ways. Nowadays, thank God, I have no

feelings of that kind. A working man's body, as such, is no more repulsive

to me than a millionaire's. I still don't like drinking out of a cup or

bottle after another person--another man, I mean; with women I don't mind

--but at. least the question of class does not enter. It was rubbing

shoulders with the tramps that cured me of it. Tramps are not really very

dirty as English people go, but they have the name for being dirty, and

when you have shared a bed with a tramp and drunk tea out of the same

snufftin, you feel that you have seen the worst and the worst has no terrors for you.

I have dwelt on these subjects because they are

vitally important. To

get rid of class-distinctions you have got to start by understanding how

one class appears when seen through the eyes of another. It is useless to

say that the middle classes are 'snobbish' and leave it at that. You get no

further if you do not realize that snobbishness is bound up with a species

of idealism. It derives from the early training in which a middle-class

child is taught almost simultaneously to wash his neck, to be ready to die

for his country, and to despise the 'lower classes'.

Here I shall be accused of being behind the times, for I was a child

before and during the war and it may be claimed that children nowadays are

brought up with more enlightened notions. It is probably true that class-

feeling is for the moment a very little less bitter than it was. The

working class are submissive where they used to be openly hostile, and the

post-war manufacture of cheap clothes and the general softening of manners

have toned down the surface differences between class and class. But $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

undoubtedly the essential feeling is still there.

Every middle-class person has a dormant class-prejudice which needs only a

small thing to arouse it;

and if he is over forty he probably has a firm conviction that his own $\,$

class has been sacrificed to the class below. Suggest to the average

unthinking person of gentle birth who is struggling to keep up appearances

on four or five hundred a year that he is a member of an exploiting

parasite class, and he will think you are mad. In perfect sincerity he will

point out to you a dozen ways in which he is worse-off than a working man.

In his eyes the workers are not a submerged race of slaves, they are a

sinister flood creeping upwards to engulf himself and his friends and his

family and to sweep all culture and all decency out of existence. Hence

that queer watchful anxiety lest the working class shall grow too $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\} =0$

prosperous. In a number of Punch soon after the war, when coal was still

fetching high prices, there is a picture of four or five miners with grim,

sinister faces riding in a cheap motor-car. A friend they are passing calls

out and asks them where they have borrowed it. They answer, 'We've bought

the thing!' This, you see, is 'good enough for Punch'; for miners to buy a

motor-car, even one car between four or five of them, is a monstrosity, a

sort of crime against nature. That was the attitude of a dozen years ago,

and I see no evidence of any fundamental change. The notion that the

working class have been absurdly pampered, hopelessly demoralized by doles,

old age pensions, free education, etc., is still widely held; it has merely

been a little shaken, perhaps, by the recent recognition that unemployment

does exist. For quantities of middle-class people, probably for a large

majority of those over fifty, the typical working man still rides to the

Labour Exchange on a motor-bike and keeps coal in his bath-tub: 'And, if

you'll believe it, my dear, they actually get married on. the dole!'

The reason why class-hatred seems to be diminishing is that nowadays

it tends not to get into print, partly owing to the mealy-mouthed habits of

our time, partly because newspapers and even books now have to appeal to a

working-class public. As a rule you can best study it in private

conversations. But if you want some printed examples, it is worth having a

look at the obiter dicta of the late Professor Saintsbury. Saintsbury was a

very learned man and along certain lines a judicious literary critic, but

when he talked of political or economic matters he only differed from the

rest of his class by the fact that he was too thick-skinned and had been

born too early to see any reason for pretending to common decency.

According to Saintsbury, unemployment insurance was simply 'contributing to

the support of lazy ne'er-do-weels', and the whole trade union movement was

no more than a kind of organized mendicancy:

'Pauper' is almost actionable now, is it not, when used as a word?

though to be paupers, in the sense of being wholly or partly supported at

the expense of other people, is the ardent, and to a considerable extent $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

achieved, aspiration of a large proportion of our population, and of an entire political party.

(Second Scrap Book)

It is to be noticed, however, that Saintsbury recognizes that unemployment is bound to exist, and, in fact, thinks

that it ought to-.exist, so long as the unemployed are made to suffer as much as possible:

Is not 'casual' labour the very secret and safety-valve of a safe and sound labour-system generally?

... In a complicated industrial and commercial state constant employment at regular wages is impossible; while dole-supported unemployment, at anything like the wages of employment, is demoralizing to begin with and ruinous at its more or less quickly arriving end.

(Last Scrap Book)

What exactly is to happen to the 'casual labourers' when no casual labour happens to be available is not made clear. Presumably (Saintsbury speaks approvingly of 'good Poor Laws') they are to go into the work-house or sleep in the streets. As to the notion that every human being ought as a matter of course to have the chance of earning at least a tolerable livelihood, Saintsbury dismisses it with contempt:

Even the 'right to live' ... extends no further than the right to protection against murder. Charity certainly will, morality possibly may, and public utility perhaps ought to add to this protection supererogatory provision for continuance of life; but it is

questionable whether strict justice demands it.

As for the insane doctrine that being born in a country gives some right to the possession of the soil of that country, it hardly requires notice.

(Last Scrap Book)

It is worth reflecting for a moment upon the beautiful implications of this last passage. The interest of passages like these (and they are scattered all through Saintsbury's work) lies in their having been printed at all. Most people are a little shy of putting that kind of thing on paper. But what Saintsbury is saying here is what any little worm with a fairly safe five hundred a year thinks, and therefore in a way one must admire him for saying it. It takes a lot of guts to be openly such a skunk as that.

This is the outlook of a confessed reactionary. But how about the middle-class person whose views are not reactionary but 'advanced'? Beneath his revolutionary mask, is he really so different from the other?

A middle-class person embraces Socialism and perhaps even joins the Communist Party. How much real difference does it make? Obviously, living within the framework of capitalist society, he has got to go on earning his living, and one cannot blame him if he clings to his

bourgeois economic

status. But is there any change in his tastes, his habits, his manners, his

imaginative background--his 'ideology', in Communist
jargon? Is there any

change in him except that he now votes Labour, or, when possible, Communist

at the elections? It is noticeable that he still habitually associates with

his own class; he is vastly more at home with a member of his own class,

who thinks him a dangerous Bolshie, than with a member of the working class

who supposedly agrees with him; his tastes in food, wine, clothes, books,

pictures, music, ballet, are still recognizably bourgeois tastes; most

significant of all, he invariably marries into his own class. Look at any

bourgeois Socialist. Look at Comrade X, member of the C.P.G.B. and author

of Marxism for Infants. Comrade \mathbf{X} , it so happens, is an old Etonian. He

would be ready to die on the barricades, in theory anyway, but you notice

that he still leaves his bottom waistcoat button undone. He idealizes the

proletariat, but it is remarkable how little his habits resemble theirs.

Perhaps once, out of sheer bravado, he has smoked a cigar with the band on,

but it would be almost physically impossible for him to put pieces of

cheese into his mouth on the point of his knife, or to sit indoors with his

cap on, or even to drink his tea out of the saucer. I have known numbers of

bourgeois Socialists, I have listened by the hour to their tirades against

their own class, and yet never, not even once, have I met one who had

picked up proletarian table-manners. Yet, after all, why not? Why should a $\,$

man who thinks all virtue resides in the proletariat still take such pains to drink his soup silently? It can only be because in his heart he feels that proletarian manners are disgusting. So you see he is still responding to the training of his childhood, when he was taught to hate, fear, and despise the working class.

9

When I was fourteen or fifteen I was an odious little snob, but no worse than other boys of my own age and class. I suppose there is no place in the world where snobbery is quite so ever-present or where it is cultivated in such refined and subtle forms as in an English public school. Here at least one cannot say that English 'education' fails to do its job. You forget your Latin and Greek within a few months of leaving school--I studied Greek for eight or ten years, and now, at thirty-three, I cannot even repeat the Greek alphabet -- but your snobbishness, unless you persistently root it out like the bindweed it is, sticks by you till your grave.

At school I was in a difficult position, for I was among boys who, for the most part, were much richer than myself, and I only went to an expensive public school because I happened to win a scholarship. This is the common experience of boys of the lower-upper-middle class, the sons of clergymen, Anglo-Indian officials, etc., and the

effects it had on me were

probably the usual ones. On the one hand it made me cling tighter than ever

to my gentility; on the other hand it filled me with resentment against the

boys whose parents were richer than mine and who took care to let me know

it. I despised anyone who was not describable as a 'gentleman', but also ${\tt I}$

hated the hoggishly rich, especially those who had grown rich too recently.

The correct and elegant thing, I felt, was to be of gentle birth but to

have no money. This is part of the credo of the lower-upper-middle class.

It has a romantic, Jacobite-in-exile feeling about it which is very comforting.

But those years, during and just after the war, were a queer time to

be at school, for England was nearer revolution than she has been since or

had been for a century earlier. Throughout almost the whole nation there

was running a wave of revolutionary feeling which has since been reversed

and forgotten, but which has left various deposits of sediment behind.

Essentially, though of course one could not then see it in perspective, it

was a revolt of youth against age, resulting directly from the war. In the

war the young had been sacrificed and the old had behaved in a way which,

even at this distance of time, is horrible to contemplate; they had been

sternly patriotic in safe places while their sons went down like swathes of

hay before the German machine guns. Moreover, the war had been conducted

mainly by old men and had been conducted with supreme incompetence. By $1918\,$

everyone under forty was in a bad temper with his elders, and the mood of

anti-militarism which followed naturally upon the fighting was extended

into a general revolt against orthodoxy and authority. At that time there

was, among the young, a curious cult of hatred of 'old men'. The dominance

of 'old men' was held to be responsible for every evil known to humanity,

and every accepted institution from Scott's novels to the House of Lords

was derided merely because 'old men' were in favour of it. For several

years it was all the fashion to be a 'Bolshie', as people then called it.

England was full of half-baked antinomian opinions. Pacifism,

internationalism, humanitarianism of all kinds, feminism, free love,

divorce-reform, atheism, birth-control--things like these were getting a

better hearing than they would get in normal times. And of course the

revolutionary mood extended to those who had been too young to fight, even

to public schoolboys. At that time we all thought of ourselves as

enlightened creatures of a new age, casting off the orthodoxy that had been

forced upon us by those detested 'old men'. We retained, basically, the

snobbish outlook of our class, we took it for granted that we could $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

continue to draw our dividends or tumble into soft jobs, but also it seemed

natural to us to be 'agin the Government'.

We derided the O.T.C., the Christian religion, and perhaps even

compulsory games and the Royal Family, and we did not realize that we were

merely taking part in a world-wide gesture of

distaste for war. Two

incidents stick in my mind as examples of the queer revolutionary feeling

of that time. One day the master who taught us English set us a kind of

general knowledge paper of which one of the questions was, 'Whom do you

consider the ten greatest men now living?' Of sixteen boys in the class

(our average age was about seventeen) fifteen included Lenin in their list.

This was at a snobbish expensive public school, and the date was 1920, when

the horrors of the Russian Revolution was still fresh in everyone's mind.

Also there were the so-called peace celebrations in 1919. Our elders had

decided for us that we should celebrate peace in the traditional manner by $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) ^{2}$

whooping over the fallen foe. We were to march into the school-yard,

carrying torches, and sing jingo songs of the type of 'Rule Britannia'. The $\,$

boys--to their honour, I think--guyed the whole proceeding and sang

blasphemous and seditious words to the tunes provided. I doubt whether

things would happen in quite that manner now.

Certainly the public

schoolboys I meet nowadays, even the intelligent ones, are much more right-

wing in their opinions than I and my contemporaries were fifteen years ago.

Hence, at the age of seventeen or eighteen, I was both a snob and a

revolutionary. I was against all authority. I had read and re-read the

entire published works of Shaw, Wells, and Galsworthy (at that time still $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

regarded as dangerously 'advanced' writers), and I loosely described myself $\,$

as a Socialist. But I had not much grasp of what

Socialism meant, and no

notion that the working class were human beings. At a distance, and through

the medium of books--Jack London's The People of the Abyss, for instance

--I could agonize over their sufferings, but I still hated them and

despised them when I came anywhere near them. I was still revolted by their

accents and infuriated by their habitual rudeness. One must remember that

just then, immediately after the war, the English working class were in a $\,$

fighting mood. That was the period of the great coal strikes, when a miner

was thought of as a fiend incarnate and old ladies looked under their beds

every night lest Robert Smillie should be concealed there. All through the

war and for a little time afterwards there had been high wages and abundant

employment; things were now returning to something
worse than normal, and

naturally the working class resisted. The men who had fought had been lured

into the army by gaudy promises, and now they were coming home to a world

where there were no jobs and not even any houses. Moreover, they had been

at war and were coming home with the soldier's attitude to life, which is

fundamentally, in spite of discipline, a lawless attitude. There was a $\,$

turbulent feeling in the air. To that time belongs the song with the memorable refrain:

There's nothing sure but
The rich get richer and the poor get children;
In the mean time,
In between time,
Ain't we got fun?

People had not yet settled down to a lifetime of unemployment

mitigated by endless cups of tea. They still vaguely expected the Utopia

for which they had fought, and even more than before they were openly

hostile to the aitch-pronouncing class. So to the shock-absorbers of the

bourgeoisie, such as myself, 'common people' still appeared brutal and

repulsive. Looking back upon that period, I seem to have spent half the

time in denouncing the capitalist system and the other half in raging over $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

the insolence of bus-conductors.

When I was not yet twenty I went to Burma, in the Indian Imperial

Police. In an 'outpost of Empire' like Burma the class-question appeared at

first sight to have been shelved. There was no obvious class-friction here,

because the all-important thing was not whether you had been to one of the

right schools but whether your skin was technically white. As a matter of

fact most of the white men in $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Burma}}$ were not of the type who in England

would be called 'gentlemen', but except for the common soldiers and a few

nondescripts they lived lives appropriate to
'gentlemen'--had servants,

that is, and called their evening meal 'dinner'--and officially they were

regarded as being all of the same class. They were 'white men', in

contradistinction to the other and inferior class, the 'natives'. But one

did not feel towards the 'natives' as one felt to-wards the 'lower classes'

at home. The essential point was that the 'natives',

at any rate the

Burmese, were not felt to be physically repulsive.

One looked down on them

as 'natives', but one was quite ready to be physically intimate with them;

and this, I noticed, was the case even with white men who had the most

vicious colour prejudice. When you have a lot of servants you soon get into

lazy habits, and I habitually allowed myself, for instance, to be dressed

and undressed by $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ Burmese boy. This was because he was a Burman and

undisgusting; I could not have endured to let an English manservant handle

me in that intimate manner. I felt towards a Burman almost as I felt $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

towards a woman. Like most other races, the Burmese have a distinctive

smell--I cannot describe it: it is a smell that makes
one's teeth tingle

--but this smell never disgusted me. (Incidentally, Orientals say that we

smell. The Chinese, I believe, say that a white man smells like a corpse.

The Burmese say the same--though no Burman was ever rude enough to say so

to me.) And in a way my attitude was defensible, for if one faces the fact

one must admit that most Mongolians have much nicer bodies than most white

men. Compare the firm-knit silken skin of the Burman, which does not

wrinkle at all till he is past forty, and then merely withers up like a $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{$

piece of dry leather, with the coarse-grained, flabby, sagging skin of the

white man. The white man has lank ugly hair growing down his legs and the

backs of his arms and in an ugly patch on his chest. The Burman has only a

tuft or two of stiff black hair at the appropriate places; for the rest he

is quite hairless and is usually beardless as well. The white man almost

always goes bald, the Burman seldom or never. The $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Burman}}$'s teeth are

perfect, though generally discoloured by betel juice, the white man's teeth

invariably decay. The white man is generally

ill-shaped, and when he grows

fat he bulges in improbable places; the Mongol has beautiful bones and in

old age he is almost as shapely as in youth.

Admittedly the white races

throw up a few individuals who for a few years are supremely beautiful; but

on the whole, say what you will, they are far less comely than Orientals.

But it was not of this that I was thinking when I found the English 'lower

classes' so much more repellant than Burmese 'natives'. I was still

thinking in terms of my early-acquired

class-prejudice. When I was not much

past twenty I was attached for a short time to a British regiment. Of

course I admired and liked the private soldiers as any youth of twenty

would admire and like hefty, cheery youths five years older than himself

with the medals of the Great War on their chests. And yet, after all, they

faintly repelled me; they were 'common people' and I did not care to be too

close to them. In the hot mornings when the company marched down the road,

myself in the rear with one of the junior subalterns, the steam of those

hundred sweating bodies in front made my stomach turn. And this, you

observe, was pure prejudice. For a soldier is probably as inoffensive,

physically, as it is possible for a male white person to be. He is

generally young, he is nearly always healthy from

fresh air and exercise, and a rigorous discipline compels him to be clean. But I could not see it like that. All I knew was that it was lower-class sweat that I was smelling, and the thought of it made me sick.

When later on I got rid of my class-prejudice, or part of it, it was in a roundabout way and by a process that took several years. The thing that changed my attitude to the class-issue was something only indirectly connected with it--something almost irrelevant.

I was in the Indian Police five years, and by the end of that time I hated the imperialism I was serving with a bitterness which I probably cannot make clear. In the free air of England that kind of thing is not fully intelligible. In order to hate imperialism you have got to be part of it. Seen from the outside the British rule in India appears--indeed, it is--benevolent and even necessary; and so no doubt are the French rule in Morocco and the Dutch rule in Borneo, for people usually govern foreigners better than they govern themselves. But it is not possible to be a part of such a system without recognizing it as an unjustifiable tyranny. Even the thickest-skinned Anglo-Indian is aware of this. Every 'native' face he sees in the street brings home to him his monstrous intrusion. And the majority of Anglo-Indians, intermittently at least, are not nearly so complacent about their position as people in England believe. From the most unexpected people, from gin-pickled old scoundrels high up in

the Government service,

I have heard some such remark as: 'Of course we've no right in this blasted

country at all. Only now we're here for God's sake let's stay here.' The

truth is that no modem man, in his heart of hearts, believes that it is

right to invade a foreign country and hold the population down by force.

Foreign oppression is a much more obvious, understandable evil than

economic oppression. Thus in England we tamely admit to being robbed in

order to keep half a million worthless idlers in luxury, but we would fight

to the last man sooner than be rilled by Chinamen; similarly, people who

live on unearned dividends without a single qualm of conscience, see

clearly enough that it is wrong to go and lord it in a foreign country

where you are not wanted. The result is that every Anglo-Indian is haunted

by a sense of guilt which he usually conceals as best he can, because there

is no freedom of speech, and merely to be overheard making a seditious $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

remark may damage his career. All over India there are Englishmen who $\,$

secretly loathe the system of which they are part; and just occasionally,

when they are quite certain of being in the right company, their hidden

bitterness overflows. I remember a night I spent on the train with a man in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

the Educational Service, a stranger to myself whose name I never

discovered. It was too hot to sleep and we spent the night in talking. Half

an hour's cautious questioning decided each of us that the other was $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

 $\mbox{'safe'};$ and then for hours, while the train jolted slowly through the

pitch-black night, sitting up in our bunks with

bottles of beer handy, we damned the British Empire--damned it from the inside, intelligently and intimately. It did us both good. But we had been speaking forbidden things, and in the haggard morning light when the train crawled into Mandalay, we parted as guiltily as any adulterous couple.

So far as my observation goes nearly all Anglo-Indian officials have moments when their conscience troubles them. The exceptions are men who are doing something which is demonstrably useful and would still have to be done whether the British were in India or not: forest officers, for instance, and doctors and engineers. But I was in the police, which is to say that I was part of the actual machinery of despotism. Moreover, in the police you see the dirty work of Empire at close quarters, and there is an

appreciable difference between doing dirty work and merely profiting by it.

Most people approve of capital punishment, but most

people wouldn't do the

hangman's job. Even the other Europeans in Burma slightly looked down on

the police because of the brutal work they had to do. I remember once when

I was inspecting a police station, an American missionary whom I knew

fairly well came in for some purpose or other. Like most Nonconformist

missionaries he was a complete ass but quite a good fellow. One of $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$

native sub-inspectors was bullying a suspect (I described this scene in

Burmese Days). The American watched it, and then turning to me said $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

thoughtfully, 'I wouldn't care to have your job.' It made me horribly

ashamed. So that was the kind of job I had! Even an ass of an American

missionary, a teetotal cock-virgin from the Middle West, had the right to

look down on me and pity me! But I should have felt the same shame even if

there had been no one to bring it home to me. I had begun to have an

indescribable loathing of the whole machinery of so-called justice. Say

what you will, pur criminal law (far more humane, by the way, in India than

in England) is a horrible thing. It needs very insensitive people to

administer it. The wretched prisoners squatting in the reeking cages of the

lock-ups, the grey cowed faces of the long-term convicts, the scarred

buttocks of the men who had been flogged with bamboos, the women and

children howling when their menfolk were led away under arrest--things

like these are beyond bearing when you are in any way directly responsible

for them. I watched a man hanged once; it seemed to me worse than a

thousand murders. I never went into a jail without feeling (most visitors

to jails feel the same) that my place was on the other side of the bars. I

thought then--I think now, for that matter--that the worst criminal who

ever walked is morally superior to a hanging judge. But of course I had to

keep these notions to myself, because of the almost utter silence that is

imposed on every Englishman in the East. In the end I worked out an

anarchistic theory that all government is evil, that the punishment always

does more harm than the crime and that people can be trusted to behave

decently if only you will let them alone. This of

course was sentimental

nonsense. I see now as I did not see then, that it is always necessary to

protect peaceful people from violence. In any state of society where crime

can be profitable you have got to have a harsh criminal law and administer

it ruthlessly; the alternative is Al Capone. But the feeling that

punishment is evil arises inescapably in those who have to administer it. I

should expect to find that even in England many policemen, judges, prison

warders, and the like are haunted by a secret horror of what they do. But

in Burma it was a double oppression that we were committing. Not only were

we hanging people and putting them in jail and so forth; we were doing it

in the capacity of unwanted foreign invaders. The Burmese themselves never

really recognized our jurisdiction. The thief whom we put in prison did not

think of himself as a criminal justly punished, he thought of himself as

the victim of a foreign conqueror. The thing that was done to him was

merely a wanton meaningless cruelty. His face, behind the stout teak bars

of the lock-up and the iron bars of the jail, said so clearly. And

unfortunately I had not trained myself to be indifferent to the expression of the human face.

When I came home on leave in 1927 I was already half determined to $\ \ \,$

throw up my job, and one sniff of English air decided me. I was not going

back to be a part of that evil despotism. But $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$ wanted much more than

merely to escape from $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ job. For five years I had been part of an

oppressive system, and it had left me with a bad conscience. Innumerable

remembered faces--faces of prisoners in the dock, of men waiting in the

condemned cells, of subordinates I had bullied and aged peasants I had

snubbed, of servants and coolies I had hit with $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ fist in moments of rage

(nearly everyone does these things in the East, at any rate occasionally:

Orientals can be very provoking)--haunted me intolerably. I was conscious

of an immense weight of guilt that I had got to expiate. I suppose that

sounds exaggerated; but if you do for five years a job that you thoroughly

disapprove of, you will probably feel the same. I had reduced everything to

the simple theory that the oppressed are always right and the oppressors

are always wrong: a mistaken theory, but the natural result of being one of

the oppressors yourself. I felt that I had got to escape not merely from

imperialism but from every form of man's dominion
over man. I wanted to

submerge myself, to get right down among the oppressed, to be one of them

and on their side against their tyrants. And, chiefly because I had had to.

think everything out in solitude, I had carried my hatred of oppression to

extraordinary lengths. At that time failure seemed to me to be the only $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

virtue. Every suspicion of self-advancement, even to 'succeed' in life to

the extent of making a few hundreds a year, seemed to me spiritually ugly, $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +$

a species of bullying.

It was in this way that ${\tt my}$ thoughts turned towards the English working

class. It was the first time that I had ever been

really aware of the

working class, and to begin with it was only because they supplied an

analogy. They were the symbolic victims of injustice, playing the same part

in England as the Burmese played in Burma. In Burma the issue had been

quite simple. The whites were up and the blacks were down, and therefore as

a matter of course one's sympathy was with the blacks. I now realized that

there was no need to go as far as Burma to find tyranny and exploitation.

Here in England, down under one's feet, were the submerged working class,

suffering miseries which in their different way were as bad as any an

Oriental ever knows. The word 'unemployment' was on everyone's lips. That

was more or less new to me, after Burma, but the driyel which the middle

classes were still talking ('These unemployed are all unemployables', etc.,

etc.) failed to deceive me. I often wonder whether that kind of stuff

deceives even the fools who utter it. On the other hand I had at that time ${}^{\circ}$

no interest in Socialism or any other economic theory. It seemed to me then

--it sometimes seems to me now, for that matter--that economic injustice

will stop the moment we want it to stop, and no sooner, and if we genuinely

want it to stop the method adopted hardly matters.

But I knew nothing about working-class conditions. I had read the $\,$

unemployment figures but I had no notion of what they implied; above all, I

did not know the essential fact that 'respectable' poverty is always the

worst. The frightful doom of a decent working man suddenly thrown on the

streets after a lifetime of steady work, his agonized struggles against

economic laws which he does not under-stand, the disintegration of

families, the corroding sense of shame--all this was outside the range of

my experience. When I thought of poverty I thought of it in terms of brute

starvation. Therefore my mind turned immediately towards the extreme cases,

the social outcasts: tramps, beggars, criminals, prostitutes. These were

'the lowest of the low', and these were the people with whom I wanted to

get in contact. What I profoundly wanted, at that time, was to find some

way of getting out of the respectable world altogether. I meditated upon it

a great deal, I even planned parts of it in detail; how one could sell

everything, give everything away, change one's name and start out with no

money and nothing but the clothes one stood up in. But in real life nobody

ever does that kind of thing; apart from the relatives and friends who have

to be considered, it is doubtful whether an educated $\ensuremath{\mathsf{man}}$ could do it if

there were any other course open to him. But at least I could go among

these people, see what their lives were like and feel myself temporarily

part of their world. Once I had been among them and accepted by them, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

should have touched bottom, and--this is what I felt: I was aware even

then that it was irrational--part of my guilt would drop from me.

I thought it over and decided what I would do. I would go suitably

disguised to Limehouse and Whitechapel and such places and sleep in common

lodging-houses and pal up with dock labourers, street hawkers, derelict

people, beggars, and, if possible, criminals. And I would find out about

tramps and how you got in touch with them and what was the proper procedure

well enough, I would go on the road myself.

At the start it was not easy. It meant masquerading and I have no $\,$

talent for acting. I cannot, for instance, disguise my accent, at any rate

not for more than a very few minutes. I

imagined -- notice the frightful

class-conscious-ness of the Englishman--that I should be spotted as a

'gentleman' the moment I opened my mouth; so I had a hard luck story ready

in case I should be questioned, I got hold of the right kind of clothes and

dirtied them in appropriate places. I am a difficult person to disguise,

being abnormally tall, but I did at least know what a tramp looks like.

(How few people do know this, by the way! Look at any picture of a tramp in

Punch. They are always twenty years out of date.) One evening, having made $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

ready at a friend's house, I set out and wandered eastward till I landed up

at a common lodging-house in Limehouse Cause-way. It was a dark, dirty-

looking place. I knew it was a common lodging-house by the sign 'Good Beds

for Single Men' in the window. Heavens, how I had to screw up my courage

before I went in! It seems ridiculous now. But you see I was still half

afraid of the working class. I wanted to get in touch with them, I even $\,$

wanted to become one of them, but I still thought of

them as alien and

dangerous; going into the dark doorway of that common lodging-house seemed

to me like going down into some dreadful subterranean place--a sewer full

of rats, for instance. I went in fully expecting a fight. The people would

spot that I was not one of themselves and immediately infer that I had come

to spy on them; and then they would set upon me and throw me out--that

was what I expected. I felt that I had got to do it, but I did not enjoy the prospect.

Inside the door a man in shirt-sleeves appeared from somewhere or

other. This was the 'deputy', and I told him that I wanted a bed for the $\,$

night. My accent did not make him stare, I noticed;
he merely demanded

ninepence and then showed me the way to a frowsy firelit kitchen

underground. There were stevedores and navvies and a few sailors sitting

about and playing draughts and drinking tea. They barely glanced at me as $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

entered. But this was Saturday night and a hefty young stevedore was drunk

and was reeling about the room. He turned, saw $\ensuremath{\mathsf{me}}$, and lurched towards $\ensuremath{\mathsf{me}}$

with broad red face thrust out and a

dangerous-looking fishy gleam in his

eyes. I stiffened myself. So the fight was coming already! The next moment

the stevedore collapsed on my chest and flung his arms round my neck. ''Ave

a cup of tea, chum!' he cried tear-fully; ''ave a cup
of tea!'

I had a cup of tea. It was a kind of baptism. After that $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ fears

vanished. Nobody questioned me, nobody showed

offensive curiosity;

everybody was polite and gentle and took me utterly for granted. I stayed

two or three days in that common lodging-house, and a few weeks later,

having picked up a certain amount of information about the habits of

destitute people, I went on the road for the first time.

I have described all this in Down and Out in Paris and London (nearly

all the incidents described there actually happened, though they have been

rearranged) and I do not want to repeat it. Later I went on the road for

much longer periods, sometimes from choice, sometimes from necessity. I

have lived in common lodging-houses for months together. But it is that

first expedition that sticks most vividly in my mind, because of the

strangeness of it--the strangeness of being at last down there among 'the

lowest of the low', and on terms of utter equality with working-class $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

people. A tramp, it is true, is not a typical
working-class person; still,

when you are among tramps you are at any rate merged in one section--one

sub-caste--of the working class, a thing which so far as I know can $\,$

happen to you in no other way. For several days $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$ wandered through the

northern outskirts of London with an Irish tramp. I was his mate,

temporarily. We shared the same cell at night, and he told me the history $\,$

of his life and I told him a fictitious history of mine, and we took it in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

turns to beg at likely-looking houses and divided up the proceeds. I was $\,$

very happy. Here I was; among 'the lowest of the

low', at the bedrock of the Western world! The class-bar was down, or seemed to be down. And down there in the squalid and, as a matter of fact, horribly boring sub-world of the tramp I had a feeling of release, of adventure, which seems absurd when I look back, but which was sufficiently vivid at the time.

10

But unfortunately you do not solve the class problem by making friends with tramps. At most you get rid of some of your own class-prejudice by doing so.

Tramps, beggars, criminals, and social outcasts generally are very exceptional beings and no more typical of the working class as a whole than, say, the literary intelligentsia are typical of the bourgeoisie. It is quite easy to be on terms of intimacy with a foreign 'intellectual', but it is not at all easy to be on terms of intimacy with an ordinary respectable foreigner of the middle class. How many Englishmen have seen the inside of an ordinary French bourgeois family, for instance? Probably it would be quite impossible to do so, short of marrying into it. And it is rather similar with the English working class. Nothing is easier than to be bosom pals with a pickpocket, if you know where to look for him; but it is very difficult to be bosom pals with a bricklayer.

But why is it so easy to be on equal terms with social outcasts?

People have often said to me, 'Surely when you are with the tramps they

don't really accept you as one of themselves? Surely they notice that you

are different--notice the difference of accent?'
etc., etc. As a matter

of fact, a fair proportion of tramps, well over a quarter I should say,

notice nothing of the kind. To begin with, many people have no ear for

accent and judge you entirely by your clothes. I was often struck by this

fact when I was begging at back doors. Some people were obviously surprised

by my 'educated' accent, others completely failed to notice it; I was dirty

and ragged and that was all they saw. Again, tramps come from all parts of

the British Isles and the variation in English accents is enormous. A tramp

is used to hearing all kinds of accents among his mates, some of them so

strange to him that he can hardly understand them, and a man from, say,

Cardiff or Durham or Dublin does not necessarily know which of the south

English accents is an 'educated' one. In any case men with 'educated'

accents, though rare among tramps, are not unknown. But even when tramps

are aware that you are of different origin from themselves, it does not

necessarily alter their attitude. From their point of view all that matters

is that you, like themselves, are 'on the bum'. And in that world it is not

done to ask too many questions. You can tell people the history of your

life if you choose, and most tramps do so on the smallest provocation, but

you are under no compulsion to tell it and whatever

story you tell will be

accepted without question. Even a bishop could be at home among tramps if

he wore the right clothes; and even if they knew he was a bishop it might

not make any difference, provided that they also knew or believed that he

was genuinely destitute. Once you are in that world and seemingly of it, it

hardly matters what you have been in the past. It is a sort of world-

within-a-world where everyone is equal, a small squalid democracy--

perhaps the nearest thing to a democracy that exists in England.

But when you come to the normal working class the position is totally

different. To begin with, there is no short cut into their midst. You can

become a tramp simply by putting on the right clothes and going to the $\,$

nearest casual ward, but you can't become a navvy or a coal-miner. You

couldn't get a job as a navvy or a coal-miner even if you were equal to the

work. Via Socialist politics you can get in touch with the working-class

intelligentsia, but they are hardly more typical than tramps or burglars. $\,$

For the rest you can only mingle with the working class by staying in their

houses as a lodger, which always has a dangerous resemblance to 'slumming'.

For some months I lived entirely in coal-miners' houses. I ate my meals

with the family, I washed at the kitchen sink, I shared bedrooms with

miners, drank beer with them, played darts with them, talked to them by the

hour together. But though I was among them, and I hope and trust they did

not find me a nuisance, I was not one of them, and

they knew it even better

than I did. However much you like them, however interesting you find their

conversation, there is always that accursed itch of class-difference, like

the pea under the princess's mattress. It is not a question of dislike or

distaste, only of difference, but it is enough to make real intimacy

impossible. Even with miners who described themselves as Communists I found $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

that it needed tactful manoeuvrings to prevent them from calling me 'sir';

and all of them, except in moments of great animation, softened their

northern accents for my benefit. I liked them and hoped they liked me; but

I went among them as a foreigner, and both of us were aware of it.

Whichever way you turn this curse of class-difference confronts you like a

wall of stone. Or rather it is not so much like a stone wall as the plate-

glass pane of an aquarium; it is so easy to pretend that it isn't there,

and so impossible to get through it.

Unfortunately it is nowadays the fashion to pretend that the glass is

penetrable. Of course everyone knows that class-prejudice exists, but at

the same time everyone claims that he, in some mysterious way, is exempt

from it. Snob-bishness is one of those vices which we can discern in every-

one else but' never in ourselves. Not only the croyant et pratiquant

Socialist, but every 'intellectual' takes it as a matter of course that he

at least is outside the class-racket; he, unlike his neighbours, can see

through the absurdity of wealth, ranks, titles, etc., etc. 'I'm not a snob'

is nowadays a kind of universal credo. Who is there who has not jeered at

the House of Lords, the military caste, the Royal Family, the public

schools, the huntin' and shootin' people, the old ladies in Cheltenham

boarding-houses, the horrors of 'county' society, and the social hierarchy

generally? To do so has become an automatic gesture. You notice this

particularly in novels. Every novelist of serious pretensions adopts an

ironic attitude towards his upper-class characters. Indeed when a novelist

has to put a definitely upper-class person--a duke or a baronet or

whatnot--into one of his stories he guys him more or less instinctively.

There is an important subsidiary cause of this in the poverty of the modern

upper-class dialect. The speech of 'educated' people is now so lifeless and

characterless that a novelist can do nothing with it. By far the easiest

way of making it amusing is to burlesque it, which means pretending that

every upper-class person is an ineffectual ass. The trick is imitated from

novelist to novelist, and in the end becomes almost a reflex action.

And yet all the while, at the bottom of his heart, every-one knows

that this is humbug. We all rail against class-distinctions, but very few

people seriously want to abolish them. Here you come upon the important

fact that every revolutionary opinion draws part of its strength from a $\,$

secret conviction that nothing can be changed.

If you want a good illustration of this, it is worth

studying the

novels and plays of John Galsworthy, keeping one eye on their chronology.

Galsworthy is a very fine specimen of the thin-skinned, tear-in-the-eye,

pre-war humanitarian. He starts out with a morbid
pity-complex which

extends even to thinking that every married woman is an angel chained to a

satyr. He is in a perpetual quiver of indignation over the sufferings of

overworked clerks, of under-paid farm hands, of fallen women, of criminals,

of prostitutes, of animals. The world, as he sees it in his earlier books

(The Man of Property, Justice, etc.), is divided into oppressors and

oppressed, with the oppressors sitting on top like some monstrous stone $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

idol which all the dynamite in the world cannot overthrow. But is it so

certain that he really wants it overthrown? On the contrary, in his fight

against an immovable tyranny he is upheld by the consciousness that it is

immovable. When things happen unexpectedly and the world-order which he has

known begins to crumble, he feels somewhat differently about it. So, having

set out to be the champion of the underdog against tyranny and injustice,

he ends by advocating (vide The Silver Spoon) that the English working

class, to cure their economic ills, shall be deported to the colonies like

batches of cattle. If he had lived ten years longer he would quite probably

have arrived at some genteel version of Fascism. This is the inevitable

fate of the sentimentalist. All his opinions change into their opposites at the first brush of reality.

The same streak of soggy half-baked insincerity runs through all

'advanced' opinion. Take the question of imperialism, for instance. Every

left-wing 'intellectual' is, as a matter of course,
an anti-imperialist. He

claims to be outside the empire-racket as automatically and self-right-

eously as he claims to be outside the class-racket. Even the right-wing

'intellectual', who is not definitely in revolt against British

so easy to be witty about the British Empire. The White Man's Burden and

'Rule, Britannia' and Kipling's novels and Anglo-Indian bores--who could

even mention such things without a snigger? And is there any cultured

person who has not at least once in his life made a joke about that old

Indian havildar who said that if the British left India there would not be

a rupee or a virgin left between Peshawar and Delhi (or wherever it was)?

That is the attitude of the typical left-winger towards imperialism, and a

thoroughly flabby, boneless attitude it is. For in the last resort, the

only important question is. Do you want the British Empire to hold together

or do you want it to disintegrate? And at the bottom of his heart no

Englishman, least of all the kind of person who is witty about ${\tt Anglo-Indian}$

colonels, does want it to disintegrate. For, apart from any other $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

consideration, the high standard of life we enjoy in $\ensuremath{\mathsf{England}}$ depends upon

our keeping a tight hold on the Empire, particularly the tropical portions

of it such as India and Africa. Under the capitalist

system, in order that

England may live in comparative comfort, a hundred million Indians must

live on the verge of starvation--an evil state of affairs, but you

acquiesce in it every time you step into a taxi or eat a plate of

strawberries and cream. The alternative is to throw the Empire overboard

and reduce England to a cold and unimportant little island where we should

all have to work very hard and live mainly on herrings and potatoes. That $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

is the very last thing that any left-winger wants. Yet the left-winger

continues to feel that he has no moral responsibility for imperialism. He

is perfectly ready to accept the products of ${\tt Empire}$ and to save his soul by

sneering at the people who hold the Empire together.

It is at this point that one begins to grasp the unreality of most

people's attitude towards the class question. So long as it is merely a

question of ameliorating the worker's lot, every decent person is agreed.

Take a coal-miner, for example. Everyone, barring fools and scoundrels,

would like to see the miner better off. If, for instance, the miner could

ride to the coal face in a comfortable trolley instead of crawling on his

hands and knees, if he could work a three-hour shift instead of seven and a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

half hours, if he could live in a decent house with five bedrooms and $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

bath-room and have ten pounds a week wages--splendid! Moreover, anyone

who uses his brain knows perfectly well that this is within the range of

possibility. The world, potentially at least, is immensely rich; develop it

as it might be developed, and we could all live like princes, supposing

that we wanted to. And to a very superficial glance the social side of the

question looks equally simple. In a sense it is true that almost everyone

would like to see class-distinctions abolished.

Obviously this perpetual

uneasiness between man and man, from which we suffer in modern England, is

a curse and a nuisance. Hence the temptation few scoutmasterish bellows of

good-will. Stop calling me 'sir', you chaps! Surely
we're all men? Let's

pal up and get our shoulders to the wheel and remember that we're all

equal, and what the devil does it matter if I know what kind of ties to

wear and you don't, and I drink my soup comparatively quietly and you drink

yours with the noise of water going down a waste-pipe--and so on and so

on and so on; all of it the most pernicious rubbish, but quite alluring

when it is suitably expressed.

But unfortunately you get no further by merely wishing class-

distinctions away. More exactly, it is necessary to wish them away, but

your wish has no efficacy unless you grasp what it involves. The fact that

has got to be faced is that to abolish

class-distinctions means abolishing

a part of yourself. Here am I, a typical member of the middle class. It is

easy for me to say that I want to get rid of class-distinctions, but nearly

everything I think and do is a result of

class-distinctions. All my notions

 $\mbox{--notions}$ of good and evil, of pleasant and unpleasant, of funny and

serious, of ugly and beautiful -- are essentially

middle-class notions; my taste in books and food and clothes, my sense of honour, my table manners, my turns of speech, my accent, even the characteristic movements of my body, are the products of a special kind of upbringing and a special niche about half-way up the social hierarchy. When I grasp this I grasp that it is no use clapping a proletarian on the back and telling him that he is as good a man as I am; if I want real contact with him, I have got to make an effort for which very likely I am unprepared. For to get outside the classracket I have got to suppress not merely my private snobbishness, but most of my other tastes and prejudices as well. I have got to alter myself so

completely that at the end I should hardly be

recognizable as the same

person. What is involved is not merely the amelioration of working-class

conditions, nor an avoidance of the more stupid forms of snobbery, but a

complete abandonment of the upper-class and middle-class attitude to life.

And whether I say Yes or No probably depends upon the extent to which I

grasp what is demanded of me.

Many people, however, imagine that they can abolish class-distinctions

without making any uncomfortable change in their own habits and 'ideology'.

Hence the eager class-breaking activities which one can see in progress on

all sides. Everywhere there are people of goodwill who quite honestly

believe that they are working for the overthrow of class-distinctions. The

middle-class Socialist enthuses over the proletariat and runs 'summer

schools' where the proletarian and the repentant bourgeois are supposed to

fall upon one another's necks and be brothers for ever; and the bourgeois

visitors come away saying how wonderful and inspiring it has all been (the

proletarian ones come away saying something different). And then there is

the outer-suburban creeping Jesus, a hangover from the William Morris $\,$

period, but still surprisingly common, who goes about saying 'Why must we

level down? Why not level up?' and proposes to level the working class 'up'

(up to his own standard) by means of hygiene, fruit-juice, birth-control,

poetry, etc. Even the Duke of York (now King George VI) runs a yearly camp

where public-school boys and boys from the slums are supposed to mix on

exactly equal terms, and do \min for the time being, rather like the animals

in one of those 'Happy Family' cages where a dog, a cat, two ferrets, a

rabbit, and three canaries preserve an armed truce while the showman's eye is on them.

All such deliberate, conscious efforts at class-breaking are, I am

convinced, a very serious mistake. Sometimes they are merely futile, but

where they do show a definite result it is usually to intensify class-

prejudice. This, if you come to think of it, is only what might be

expected. You have forced the pace and set up an uneasy, unnatural equality

between class and class; the resultant friction brings to the surface all

kinds of feelings that might other-wise have remained buried, perhaps for

ever. As I said apropos of Galsworthy, the opinions

of the sentimentalist

change into their opposites at the first touch of reality. Scratch the

average pacifist and you find a jingo. The

middle-class I.L.P.'er and the

bearded fruit-juice drinker are all for a classless society so long as they

see the proletariat through the wrong end of the telescope; force them into

any real contact with a proletarian--let them get into a fight with a

drunken fish-porter on Saturday night, for instance--and they are capable

of swinging back to the most ordinary middle-class snobbishness. Most

middle-class Socialists, however, are very unlikely to get into fights with

drunken fish-porters; when they do make a genuine contact with the working

class, it is usually with the working-class intelligentsia. But the

working-class intelligentsia is sharply divisible into two different types.

There is the type who remains working-class--who goes on working as a

mechanic or a dock-labourer or whatever it may be and does not bother to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

change his working-class accent and habits, but who 'improves his mind' in

his spare time and works for the I.L.P. or the Communist Party; and there

is the type who does alter his way of life, at least externally, and who by

means of State scholarships succeeds in climbing into the middle class. The

first is one of the finest types of man we have. I can think of some I have

met whom not even the most hidebound Tory could help liking and admiring.

The other type, with exceptions--D. H. Lawrence, for example--is less admirable.

To begin with, it is a pity, though it is a natural result of the

scholarship system, that the proletariat should tend to interpenetrate the

middle class via the literary intelligentsia. For it is not easy to crash

your way into the literary intelligentsia if you happen to be a decent

human being. The modem English literary world, at any rate the high-brow

section of it, is a sort of poisonous jungle where only weeds can flourish.

It is just possible to be a literary gent and to keep your decency if you

are a definitely popular writer--a writer of detective stories, for

instance; but to be a highbrow, with a footing in the snootier magazines,

means delivering yourself over to horrible campaigns of wire-pulling and

backstairs-crawling. In the highbrow world you 'get on', if you 'get on' at

all, not so much by your literary ability as by being the life and soul of

cocktail parties and kissing the bums of verminous little lions. This,

then, is the world that most readily opens its doors to the proletarian who

is climbing out of his own class. The 'clever' boy of a working-class

family, the sort of boy who wins scholarships and is obviously not fitted $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

for a life of manual labour, may find other ways of rising into the class

above--a slightly different type, for instance, rises via Labour Party

politics--but the literary way is by far the most usual. Literary London

now teems with young men who are of proletarian origin and have been $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

educated by means of scholarships. Many of them are very disagreeable

people, quite unrepresentative of their class, and it

is most unfortunate

that when a person of bourgeois origin does succeed in meeting a

proletarian face to face on equal terms, this is the type he most commonly

meets. For the result is to drive the bourgeois, who has idealized the

proletariat so long as he knew nothing about them, back into frenzies of

snobbishness. The process is sometimes very comic to watch, if you happen

to be watching it from the outside. The poor well-meaning bourgeois, eager

to embrace his proletarian brother, leaps forward with open arms; and only

a little while later he is in retreat, minus a borrowed five pounds and

exclaiming dolefully, 'But, dash it, the fellow's not a gentleman!'

The thing that disconcerts the bourgeois in a contact of this kind is

to find certain of his own professions being taken seriously. I have

pointed out that the left-wing opinions of the average 'intellectual' are

mainly spurious. From pure imitativeness he jeers at things which in fact

he believes in. As one example out of many, take the public-school code of

honour, with its 'team spirit' and 'Don't hit a man when he's down', and

all the rest of that familiar bunkum. Who has not laughed at it? Who,

calling himself an 'intellectual', would dare not to laugh at it? But it is

a bit different when you meet somebody who laughs at it from the outside;

just as we spend our lives in abusing England but grow very angry when we

hear a foreigner saying exactly the same things. No one has been more

amusing about the public schools than 'Beachcomber'

of the Express. He

laughs, quite rightly, at the ridiculous code which makes cheating at cards

the worst of all sins. But would 'Beachcomber' like it if one of his own

friends was caught cheating at cards? I doubt it. It is only when you meet

someone of a different culture from yourself that you begin to realize what

your own beliefs really are. If you are a bourgeois 'intellectual' you too

readily imagine that you have somehow become unbourgeois because you find

it easy to laugh at patriotism and the ${\tt G.}$ of ${\tt E.}$ and the ${\tt Old}$ School Tie and

Colonel Blimp and all the rest of it. But from the point of view of the

proletarian 'intellectual', who at least by origin is genuinely outside the

bourgeois culture, your resemblances to Colonel Blimp may be more important

than your differences. Very likely he looks upon you and Colonel Blimp as

practically equivalent persons; and in a way he is right, though neither

you nor Colonel Blimp would admit it. So that the meeting of proletarian $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

and bourgeois, when they do succeed in meeting, is not always the embrace

of long-lost brothers; too often it is the clash of alien cultures which can only meet in war.

I have been looking at this from the point of view of the bourgeois

who finds his secret beliefs challenged and is driven back to a frightened

conservatism. But one has also got to consider the antagonism that is

with frightful agonies he has struggled out of his own class into another

where he expects to find a wider freedom and a greater intellectual

refinement; and all he finds, very often, is a sort of hollowness, a

deadness, a lack of any warm human feeling--of any real life whatever.

Sometimes the bourgeoisie seem to him just dummies with money and water in

their veins instead of blood. This at any rate is what he says, and almost

any young highbrow of proletarian origin will spin you this line of talk.

Hence the 'proletarian' cant from which we now suffer. Everyone knows, or

ought to know by this time, how it runs: the bourgeoisie are 'dead' (a

favourite word of abuse nowadays and very effective be-cause meaningless),

bourgeois culture is bankrupt, bourgeois 'values' are despicable, and so on $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,2,3,\ldots \right\}$

and so forth; if you want examples, see any number of the Left Review or

any of the younger Communist writers such as Alee Brown, Philip Henderson,

etc. The sincerity of much of this is suspect, but D. H. Lawrence, who was

sincere, whatever else he may not have been, expresses the same thought

over and over again. It is curious how he harps upon that idea that the

English bourgeoisie are all dead, or at least gelded. Mellors, the

gamekeeper in Lady Chatterley's Lover (really Lawrence himself), has had

the opportunity to get out of his own class and does not particularly want

to return to it, because English working people have various 'disagree-able

habits'; on the other hand the bourgeoisie, with whom he has also mixed to

some extent, seem to him half dead, a race of eunuchs. Lady Chatterley's

husband, symbolically, is impotent in the actual

physical sense. And then there is the poem about the young man (once again Lawrence himself) who 'got up to the top of the tree' but came down saying:

Oh you've got to be like a monkey if you climb up the tree! You've no more use for the solid earth and the lad you used to be. You sit in the boughs and gibber with superiority. They all gibber and gibber and chatter, and never a word they say comes really out of their guts, lad, they make it up half-way. ... I tell you something's been done to 'em, to the pullets up above; there's not a cock bird among 'em, etc., etc.

You could hardly have it in plainer terms than that. Possibly by the people at 'the top of the tree' Lawrence only means the real bourgeoisie, those in the L2000 a year class and over, but I doubt it. More probably he means everyone who is more or less within the bourgeois culture--everyone who was brought up with a mincing accent and in a house where there were one or two servants. And at this point you realize the danger of the 'proletarian' cant--realize, I mean, the terrible antagonism that it is capable of arousing. For when you come to such an accusation as this, you are up against a blank wall. Lawrence tells me that because I have been to a public school I am a eunuch. Well, what about it? I can produce medical evidence to the contrary, but what good will that do? Lawrence's

condemnation remains. If you tell me I am a scoundrel I may mend my ways,

but if you tell me I am a eunuch you are tempting me to hit back in any way

that seems feasible. If you want to make an enemy of a man, tell him that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

his ills are incurable.

This then is the net result of most meetings between proletarian and

bourgeois: they lay bare a real antagonism which is intensified by the

'proletarian' cant, itself the product of forced contacts between class and

class. The only sensible procedure is to go slow and not force the pace. If

you secretly think of yourself as a gentleman and as such the superior of

the greengrocer's errand boy, it is far better to say so than to tell lies

about it. Ultimately you have got to drop your snobbishness, but it is

fatal to pretend to drop it before you are really ready to do so.

Meanwhile one can observe on every side that dreary phenomenon, the

middle-class person who is an ardent Socialist at twenty-five and a

sniffish Conservative at thirty-five. In a way his recoil is natural enough

--at any rate, one can see how his thoughts run. Perhaps a classless

society doesn't mean a beatific state of affairs in which we shall all go

on behaving exactly as before except that there will be no class-hatred and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

no snobbishness; perhaps it means a bleak world in which all our ideals,

our codes, our tastes--our 'ideology', in fact--will have no meaning.

Perhaps this class-breaking business isn't so simple as it looked! On the

contrary, it is a wild ride into the darkness, and it may be that at the

end of it the smile will be on the face of the tiger. With loving though

slightly patronizing smiles we set out to greet our proletarian brothers,

and behold! our proletarian brothers--in so far as we understand them--

are not asking for our greetings, they are asking us to commit suicide.

When the bourgeois sees it in that form he takes to flight, and if his

flight is rapid enough it may carry him to Fascism.

11

Meanwhile what about Socialism?

It hardly needs pointing out that at this moment we are in a very

serious mess, so serious that even the dullest-witted people find it

difficult to remain unaware of it. We are living in a world in which nobody

is free, in which hardly anybody is secure, in which it is almost

impossible to be honest and to remain alive. For enormous blocks of the

working class the conditions of life are such as I have described in the

opening chapters of this book, and there is no chance of those conditions

showing any fundamental improvement. The very best the English-working

class can hope for is an occasional temporary decrease in unemployment when

this or that industry is artificially stimulated by, for instance,

rearmament. Even the middle classes, for the first time in their history,

are feeling the pinch. They have not known actual hunger yet, but more and

more of them find themselves floundering in a sort of deadly net of

frustration in which it is harder and harder to persuade yourself that you

are either happy, active, or useful. Even the lucky ones at the top, the

real bourgeoisie, are haunted periodically by a consciousness of the

miseries below, and still more by fears of the menacing future. And this is

merely a preliminary stage, in a country still rich with the loot of a

hundred years. Presently there may be coining God knows what horrors--

horrors of which, in this sheltered island, we have not even a traditional knowledge.

And all the while everyone who uses his brain knows that Socialism, as

a world-system and wholeheartedly applied, is a way out. It would at least

ensure our getting enough to eat even if it deprived us of everything else.

Indeed, from one point of view, Socialism is such elementary common sense

that I am sometimes amazed that it has not established itself already. The

world is a raft sailing through space with, potentially, plenty of

provisions for everybody; the idea that we must all cooperate and see to it

that every-one does his fair share of the work and gets his fair share of

the provisions seems so blatantly obvious that one would say that no one

could possibly fail to accept it unless he had some corrupt motive for

clinging to the present system. Yet the fact that we have got to face is

that Socialism is not establishing itself. Instead of

going forward, the

cause of Socialism is visibly going back. At this moment Socialists almost

everywhere are in retreat before the onslaught of Fascism, and events are

moving at terrible speed. As I write this the Spanish Fascist forces are

bombarding Madrid, and it is quite likely that before the book is printed

we shall have another Fascist country to add to the list, not to mention a

Fascist control of the Mediterranean which may have the effect of

delivering British foreign policy into the hands of Mussolini. I do not,

however, want here to discuss the wider political issues. What I am $\,$

concerned with is the fact that Socialism is losing ground exactly where it

ought to be gaining it. With so much in its favour--for every empty belly

is an argument for Socialism--the idea of Socialism is less widely

accepted than it was ten years ago. The average thinking person nowadays is

not merely not a Socialist, he is actively hostile to Socialism. This must

be due chiefly to mistaken methods of propaganda. It means that Socialism,

in the form of which it is now presented to us, has about it something

inherently distasteful--something that drives away the very people who $\,$

ought to be nocking to its support.

A few years ago this might have seemed unimportant. It seems only

yesterday that Socialists, especially orthodox Marxists, were telling me

with superior smiles that Socialism was going to arrive of its own accord

by some mysterious process called 'historic necessity'. Possibly that

belief still lingers, but it has been shaken, to say the least of it. Hence the sudden attempts of Communists in various countries to ally themselves with democratic forces which they have been sabotaging for years past. At a moment like this it is desperately necessary to discover just why Socialism has failed in its appeal. And it is no use writing off the current distaste for Socialism as the product of stupidity or corrupt motives. If you want to remove that distaste you have got to understand it, which means getting inside the mind of the ordinary objector to Socialism, or at least regarding his viewpoint sympathetically. No case is really answered until it has had a fair hearing. Therefore, rather paradoxically, in order to defend Socialism it is necessary to start by attacking it.

In the last three chapters I tried to analyse the difficulties that are raised by our anachronistic class-system; I shall have to touch on that subject again, because I believe that the present intensely stupid handling of the class-issue may stampede quantities of potential Socialists into Fascism. In the chapter following this one I want to discuss certain underlying assumptions that alienate sensitive minds from Socialism. But in the present chapter I am merely dealing with the obvious, preliminary objections -- the kind of thing that the person who is not a Socialist (I don't mean the 'Where's the money to come from?' type) always starts by saying when you tax him on the subject. Some of these objections may appear

frivolous or self-contradictory, but that is beside the point; I am merely

discussing symptoms. Anything is relevant which helps to make clear why

Socialism is not accepted. And please notice that $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$ am arguing for

Socialism, not against it. But for the moment I am advocatus diaboli. I am $\,$

making out a case for the sort of person who is in sympathy with the

fundamental aims of Socialism, who has the brains to see that $\operatorname{Socialism}$

would 'work', but who in practice always takes to flight when Socialism is mentioned.

Question a person of this type, and you will often get the semi-

frivolous answer: 'I don't object to Socialism, but I do object to

Socialists.' Logically it is a poor argument, but it carries weight with

many people. As with the Christian religion, the worst advertisement for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

Socialism is its adherents.

The first thing that must strike any outside observer is that

Socialism, in its developed form is a theory confined entirely to the

middle classes. The typical Socialist is not, as tremulous old ladies

imagine, a ferocious-looking working man with greasy overalls and a raucous $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

voice. He is either a youthful snob-Bolshevik who in five years' time will

quite probably have made a wealthy marriage and been converted to Roman

Catholicism; or, still more typically, a prim little man with a white-

collar job, usually a secret teetotaller and often with vegetarian

leanings, with a history of Nonconformity behind him,

and, above all, with

a social position which he has no intention of forfeiting. This last type

is surprisingly common in Socialist parties of every shade; it has perhaps

been taken over en bloc from. the old Liberal Party. In addition to this

there is the horrible--the really

disquieting--prevalence of cranks

wherever Socialists are gathered together. One sometimes gets the

impression that the mere words 'Socialism' and
'Communism' draw towards

them with magnetic force every fruit-juice drinker, nudist, sandal-wearer,

sex-maniac, Quaker, 'Nature Cure' quack, pacifist, and feminist in England.

One day this summer I was riding through Letchworth when the bus stopped $\,$

and two dreadful-looking old men got on to it. They were both about sixty,

both very short, pink, and chubby, and both hatless. One of them was

obscenely bald, the other had long grey hair bobbed in the Lloyd George

style. They were dressed in pistachio-coloured shirts and khaki shorts into

which their huge bottoms were crammed so tightly that you could study every

dimple. Their appearance created a mild stir of horror on top of the bus.

The man next to me, a commercial traveller I should say, glanced at me, at

them, and back again at me, and murmured

'Socialists', as who should say,

'Red Indians'. He was probably right--the I.L.P. were holding their

summer school at Letchworth. But the point is that to him, as an ordinary

man, a crank meant a Socialist and a Socialist meant a crank. Any

Socialist, he probably felt, could be counted on to have something $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

eccentric about him. And some such notion seems to exist even among

Socialists themselves. For instance, I have here a prospectus from another

summer school which states its terms per week and then asks me to say $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

'whether my diet is ordinary or vegetarian'. They take it for granted, you

see, that it is necessary to ask this question. This kind of thing is by

itself sufficient to alienate plenty of decent people. And their instinct

is perfectly sound, for the food-crank is by definition a person willing to

cut himself off from human society in hopes of adding five years on to the

life of his carcase; that is, a person but of touch with common humanity.

To this you have got to add the ugly fact that most middle-class

Socialists, while theoretically pining for a class-less society, cling like

glue to their miserable fragments of social prestige. I remember my

sensations of horror on first attending an I.L.P. branch meeting in London.

(It might have been rather different in the North, where the bourgeoisie

are less thickly scattered.) Are these mingy little beasts, I thought, the

champions of the working class? For every person there, male and female,

bore the worst stigmata of sniffish middle-class superiority. If a real

working man, a miner dirty from the pit, for instance, had suddenly walked

into their midst, they would have been embarrassed, angry, and disgusted;

some, I should think, would have fled holding their noses. You can see the

same tendency in Socialist literature, which, even when it is not openly

written de haut en bos, is always completely removed from the working class

in idiom and manner of thought. The Coles, Webbs, Stracheys, etc., are not

exactly proletarian writers. It is doubtful whether anything describable as

proletarian literature now exists--even the Daily Worker is written in

standard South English--but a good music-hall comedian comes nearer to

producing it than any Socialist writer I can think of. As for the technical $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

jargon of the Communists, it is as far removed from the common speech as

the language of a mathematical textbook. I remember hearing a professional

Communist speaker address a working-class audience. His speech was the

usual bookish stuff, full of long sentences and parentheses and

'Notwithstanding' and 'Be that as it may', besides the usual jargon of

'ideology' and 'class-consciousness' and 'proletarian solidarity' and all

the rest of it. After him a Lancashire working man got up and spoke to the

crowd in their own broad lingo. There was not much doubt which of the two

was nearer to his audience, but I do not suppose for a moment that the $\,$

Lancashire working man was an orthodox Communist.

For it must be remembered that a working man, so long as he remains a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

genuine working man, is seldom or never a Socialist in the complete,

logically consistent sense. Very likely he votes Labour, or even Communist

if he gets the chance, but his conception of Socialism is quite different

from that of the, book-trained Socialist higher up. To the ordinary working

man, the sort you would meet in any pub on Saturday

night, Socialism does

not mean much more than better wages and shorter' hours and nobody bossing

you about. To the more revolutionary type, the type who is a hunger-marcher

and is blacklisted by employers, the word is a sort of rallying-cry against

the forces of oppression, a vague threat of future violence. But, so far as

my experience goes, no genuine working man grasps the deeper implications

of Socialism. Often, in my opinion, he is a truer Socialist than the

orthodox Marxist, because he does remember, what the other so often $\ensuremath{\mathsf{N}}$

forgets, that Socialism means justice and common decency. But what he does

not grasp is that Socialism cannot be narrowed down to mere economic

justice' and that a reform of that magnitude is bound to work immense

changes in our civilization and his own way of life. His vision of the

Socialist future is a vision of present society with the worst abuses left

out, and with interest centring round the same things as at present--

family life, the pub, football, and local politics. As for the philosophic

side of ${\tt Marxism}$, the pea-and-thimble trick with those three mysterious

entities, thesis, antithesis, and synthesis, I have never met a working man

who had the faintest interest in it. It is of course true that plenty of $% \left\{ 1\right\} =\left\{ 1\right\} =\left$

people of working-class origin are Socialists of the theoretical bookish

type. But they are never people who have remained working men; they don't

work with their hands, that is. They belong either to the type I mentioned $\,$

in the last chapter, the type who squirms into the $\mbox{\ensuremath{\text{middle}}}$ class via the

literary intelligentsia, or the type who becomes a Labour M.P. or a high-up

trade union official. This last type is one of the most desolating

spectacles the world contains. He has been picked out to fight for his

mates, and all it means to him is a soft job and the chance of 'bettering'

himself. Not merely while but by fighting the bourgeoisie he becomes a

bourgeois himself. And meanwhile it is quite possible that he has remained

an orthodox Marxist. But I have yet to meet a working miner, steel-worker,

cotton-weaver, docker, navvy, or whatnot who was 'ideologically' sound.

One of the analogies between Communism and Roman Catholicism is that

only the 'educated' are completely orthodox. The most immediately striking

thing about the English Roman Catholics--I don't mean the real Catholics,

I mean the converts: Ronald Knox, Arnold Lunn et hoc genus--is their

intense self-consciousness. Apparently they never think, certainly they

never write, about anything but the fact that they are Roman Catholics;

this single fact and the self-praise resulting from it form the entire $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

stock-in-trade of the Catholic literary man. But the really interesting

thing about these people is the way in which they have worked out the

supposed implications of orthodoxy until the tiniest details of life are

involved. Even the liquids you drink, apparently, can be orthodox or

heretical; hence the campaigns of Chesterton, 'Beachcomber', etc., against

tea and in favour of beer. According to Chesterton, tea-drinking' is $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2$

'pagan', while beer-drinking is 'Christian', and coffee is 'the puritan's

opium'. It is unfortunate for this theory that Catholics abound in the

'Temperance' movement and the greatest tea-boozers in the world are the

Catholic Irish; but what I am interested in here is the attitude of mind

that can make even food and drink an occasion for religious intolerance. A

working-class Catholic would never be so absurdly consistent as that. He

does not spend his time in brooding on the fact that he is a Roman

Catholic, and he is not particularly conscious of being different from his

non-Catholic neighbours. Tell an Irish dock-labourer in the slums of

Liverpool that his cup of tea is 'pagan', and he will call you a fool. And

even in more serious matters he I does not always grasp the implications of

his faith. In the I Roman Catholic homes of Lancashire you see the crucifix

I on the wall and the Daily Worker on the table. It is only the 'educated'

man, especially the literary man, who knows how to be a bigot. And, mutatis

mutandis, it is the same with ${\tt Communism}.$ The creed is never found in its

pure form in a genuine proletarian.

It may be said, however, that even if the theoretical book-trained

Socialist is not a working man himself, at least he is actuated by a love

of the working class. He is endeavouring to shed his bourgeois status and

fight on the side of the proletariat--that, obviously, must be his motive.

But is it? Sometimes I look at a Socialist--the

intellectual, tract-

writing type of Socialist, with his pullover, his fuzzy hair, and his

Marxian quotation—and wonder what the devil his motive really is. It is

often difficult to believe that it is a love of anybody, especially of the

working class, from whom he is of all people the furthest removed. The

underlying motive of many Socialists, I believe, is simply a hypertrophied

sense of order. The present state of affairs offends them not because it

causes misery, still less because it makes freedom impossible, but because

it is untidy; what they desire, basically, is to reduce the world to

something resembling a chessboard. Take the plays of a lifelong Socialist

like Shaw. How much understanding or even awareness of working-class life

do they display? Shaw himself declares that you can only bring a working

man on the stage 'as an object of compassion'; in
practice he doesn't bring

him on even as that, but merely as a sort of $\mbox{W.}$ $\mbox{W.}$ Jacobs figure of fun--

the ready-made comic East Ender, like those in Major Barbara and Captain

Brassbound's Conversion. At best his attitude to the working class is the

sniggering Punch attitude, in more serious moments (consider, for instance,

the young man who symbolizes the dispossessed classes in Misalliance) he

finds them merely contemptible and disgusting.

Poverty and, what is more,

the habits of mind created by poverty, are something to be abolished from

above, by violence if necessary; perhaps even preferably by violence. Hence

his worship of 'great' men and appetite for dictatorships, Fascist or

Communist; for to him, apparently (vide his remarks apropos of the Italo-

Abyssinian war and the Stalin-Wells conversations), Stalin and Mussolini

are almost equivalent persons. You get the same thing in a more mealy-

mouthed form in Mrs Sidney Webb's autobiography, which gives,

unconsciously, a most revealing picture of the high-minded Socialist slum-

visitor. The truth is that, to many people calling themselves Socialists,

revolution does not mean a movement of the masses with which they hope to

associate themselves; it means a set of reforms which 'we', the clever

ones, are going to impose upon 'them', the Lower Orders. On the other hand,

it would be a mistake to regard the book-trained Socialist as a bloodless

creature entirely incapable of emotion. Though seldom giving much evidence

of affection for the exploited, he is perfectly capable of displaying

hatred--a sort of queer, theoretical, in vacua hatred--against the

exploiters. Hence the grand old Socialist sport of denouncing the

bourgeoisie. It is strange how easily almost any Socialist writer can lash

himself into frenzies of rage against the class to which, by birth or by

adoption, he himself invariably belongs. Sometimes the hatred of bourgeois

habits and 'ideology' is so far-reaching that it extends even to bourgeois

characters in books. According to Henri Barbusse, the characters in the

novels of Proust, Gide, etc., are 'characters whom one would dearly love to

have at the other side of a barricade'. 'A barricade', you observe. Judging

from Le Feu, I should have thought Barbusse's

experience of barricades had

left him with a distaste for them. But the imaginary bayoneting of

'bourgeois', who presumably don't hit back, is a bit different from the real article.

The best example of bourgeois-baiting literature that I have yet come

across is Mirsky's Intelligentsia of Great Britain. This is a very

interesting and ably-written book, and it should be read by everyone who

wants to understand the rise of Fascism. Mirsky (formerly Prince Mirsky)

was a White Russian emigre who came to England and was for some years a $\,$

lecturer in Russian literature at London University. Later he was converted

to Communism, returned to Russia, and produced his book as a sort of 'show-

up' of the British intelligentsia from a Marxist standpoint. It is a

viciously malignant book, with an unmistakable note of 'Now I'm out of your

reach I can say what I like about you' running all
through it, and apart

from a general distortion it contains some quite definite and probably

intentional misrepresentation: as, for instance, when Conrad is declared to

be 'no less imperialist than Kipling', and D. H. Lawrence is described as

writing 'bare-bodied pornography' and as having 'succeeded in erasing all

clues to his proletarian origin'--as though Lawrence had been a pork-

butcher climbing into the House of Lords! This kind of thing is very

disquieting when one remembers that it is addressed to a Russian audience

who have no means of checking its accuracy. But what I am thinking of at

the moment is the effect of such a book on the English public. Here you

have a literary man of aristocratic extraction, a man who had probably

never in his life spoken to a working man on any-thing approaching equal

terms, uttering venomous screams of libel against his 'bourgeois'

colleagues. Why? So far as appearances go, from pure malignity. He is

battling against the British intelligentsia, but what is he battling for?

Within the book itself there is no indication. Hence the net effect of

books like this is to give outsiders the impression that there is nothing

in Communism except hatred. And here once again you come upon that queer

resemblance between Communism and (convert) Roman Catholicism. If you want

to find a book as evil-spirited as The Intelligentsia of Great Britain, the

likeliest place to look is among the popular Roman Catholic apologists. You

will find there the same venom and the same dishonesty, though, to do the

Catholic justice, you will not usually find the same bad manners. Queer

that Comrade Mirsky's spiritual brother should be Father---! The

Communist and the Catholic are not saying the same thing, in a sense they

are even saying opposite things, and each would gladly boil the other in

oil if circumstances permitted; but from the point of view of an outsider

they are very much alike.

The fact is that Socialism, in the form in which it is now presented,

appeals chiefly to unsatisfactory or even inhuman types. On the one hand

you have the warm-hearted un-thinking Socialist, the

typical working-class

Socialist, who only wants to abolish poverty and does not always grasp what

this implies. On the other hand, you have the intellectual, book-trained

Socialist, who understands that it is necessary to throw our present

civilization down the sink and is quite willing to do so. And this type is

drawn, to begin with, entirely from the middle class, and from a rootless

town-bred section of the middle class at that. Still more unfortunately, it

includes--so much so that to an outsider it even appears to be composed

of--the kind of people I have been discussing; the foaming denouncers of

the bourgeoisie, and the more-water-iri-your-beer reformers of whom Shaw is

the prototype, and the astute young social-literary climbers who are

Communists now, as they will be Fascists five years hence, because it is

all the go, and all that dreary tribe of high-minded' women and sandal-

wearers and bearded fruit-juice drinkers who come nocking towards the smell

of 'progress' like bluebottles to a dead cat. The ordinary decent person,

who is in sympathy with the essential aims of Socialism, is given the

impression that there is no room for his kind in any Socialist party that

means business. Worse, he is driven to the cynical conclusion that

Socialism is a kind of doom which is probably coming but must be staved off

as long as possible. Of course, as I have suggested already, it is not

strictly fair to judge a movement by its adherents; but the point is that

people invariably do so, and that the popular conception of Socialism is

coloured by the conception of a Socialist as a dull or disagreeable person.

'Socialism' is pictured as a state of affairs in which our more vocal

Socialists would feel thoroughly at home. This does great harm to the

cause. The ordinary man may not flinch from a dictatorship of the

proletariat, if you offer it tactfully; offer him a dictatorship of the

prigs, and he gets ready to fight.

There is a widespread feeling that any civilization in which Socialism

was a reality would bear the same relation to our own as a brand-new bottle

of colonial burgundy, bears to a few spoonfuls of first-class Beaujolais.

We live, admittedly, amid the wreck of a civilization, but it has been a

great civilization in its day, and in patches it still flourishes almost

undisturbed. It still has its bouquet, so to speak; whereas the imagined

Socialist future, like the colonial burgundy, tastes only of iron and

water. Hence the fact, which is really a disastrous one, that artists of

any consequence can never be persuaded into the Socialist fold. This is

particularly the case with the writer whose political opinions are more

directly and obviously connected with his work than those of, say, a $\,$

painter. If one faces facts one must admit that nearly everything

describable as Socialist literature is dull, tasteless, and bad. Consider

the situation in England at the present moment. A whole generation has $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

grown up more or less in familiarity with the idea of Socialism; and yet

the higher-water mark, so to speak, of Socialist

literature is W. H. Auden,

a sort of gutless Kipling,[Orwell somewhat retracted this remark later.

See 'Inside the Whale', England Your England, p. 120 (Seeker & Warburg

Collected Edition).] and the even feebler poets who are associated

with him. Every writer of consequence and every book worth reading is on

the other side. I am willing to believe that it is otherwise in Russia--

about which I know nothing, however--for presumably in post-revolutionary

Russia the mere violence of events would tend to throw up a vigorous

literature of sorts. But it is certain that in Western Europe Socialism has

produced no literature worth having. A little while ago, when the issues

were less clear, there were writers of some vitality who called themselves

Socialists, but they were using the word as a vague label. Thus, if Ibsen

and Zola described themselves as Socialists, it did not mean much more than

that they were 'progressives', while in the case of Anatole France it meant

merely that he was an anticlerical. The real Socialist writers, the

propagandist writers, have always been dull, empty
windbags--Shaw,

Barbusse, Upton Sinclair, William Morris, Waldo Frank, etc., etc. I am not,

of course, suggesting that Socialism is to be condemned because literary

gents don't like it; I am not even suggesting that it ought necessarily to

produce literature on its own account, though I do think it a bad sign that

it has produced no songs worth singing. I am. merely pointing to the fact

that writers of genuine talent are usually indifferent to Socialism, and

sometimes actively and mischievously hostile. And this is a disaster, not

only for the writers themselves, but for the cause of Socialism, which has great need of them.

This, then, is the superficial aspect of the ordinary man's recoil

from Socialism. I know the whole dreary argument very thoroughly, because ${\tt I}$

know it from both sides. Every-thing that I say here I have both said to

ardent Socialists who were trying to convert me, and had said to me by

bored non-Socialists whom I was trying to convert. The whole thing amounts

to a kind of malaise produced by dislike of individual Socialists,

especially of the cocksure Marx-quoting type. Is it childish to be

influenced by that kind of thing? Is it silly? Is it even contemptible? It

is all that, but the point is that it happens, and therefore it is

important to keep it in mind.

12

chapter.

However, there is a much more serious difficulty than the local and temporary objections which I discussed in the last

Faced by the fact that intelligent people are so often on the other

side, the Socialist is apt to set it down to corrupt motives (conscious or

unconscious), or to an ignorant belief that Socialism would not 'work', or

to a mere dread of the horrors and discomforts of the

revolutionary period

before Socialism is established. Undoubtedly all these are important, but

there are plenty of people who are influenced by none of them and are

nevertheless hostile to Socialism. Their reason for recoiling from

Socialism is spiritual, or 'ideological'. They object to it not on the

ground that it would not 'work', but precisely because it would 'work' too

well. What they are afraid of is not the things that are going to happen in

their own lifetime, but the things that are going to happen in a remote

future when Socialism is a reality.

I have very seldom met a convinced Socialist who could grasp that

thinking people may be repelled by the objective towards which Socialism

appears to be moving. The Marxist, especially, dismisses this kind of thing

as bourgeois sentimentality. Marxists as a rule are not very good at

reading the minds of their adversaries; if they were, the situation in

Europe might be less desperate than it is at present. Possessing a

technique which seems to explain everything, they do not often bother to

discover what is going on inside other people's heads. Here, for instance,

is an illustration of the kind of thing I mean. Discussing the widely held

theory--which in one sense is certainly true--that Fascism is a product

of Communism, Mr N. A. Holdaway, one of the ablest Marxist writers we

possess, writes as follows:

The hoary legend of Communism leading to Fascism. \dots The element

of truth in it is this: that the appearance of Communist activity warns the

ruling class that democratic Labour Parties are no longer capable of

holding the working class in check, and that capitalist dictatorship must assume another form if it is to survive.

You see here the defects of the method. Because he has detected the

underlying economic cause of Fascism, he tacitly assumes that the spiritual

side of it is of no importance. Fascism is written off as a manoeuvre of

the 'ruling class', which at bottom it is. But this in itself would only

explain why Fascism appeals to capitalists. What about the millions who are

not capitalists, who in a material sense have nothing to gain from Fascism

and are often aware of it, and who, nevertheless, are Fascists? Obviously

their approach has been purely along the ideological line. They could only

be stampeded into Fascism because Communism attacked or seemed to attack

economic motive; and in that sense it is perfectly true that Communism

leads to Fascism. It is a pity that Marxists nearly always concentrate on

letting economic cats out of ideological bags; it does in one sense reveal

the truth, but with this penalty, that most of their propaganda misses its

mark. It is the spiritual recoil from Socialism, especially as it manifests

itself in sensitive people, that I want to discuss in this chapter. I shall

have to analyse it at some length, because it is very widespread, very

powerful, and, among Socialists, almost completely ignored.

The first thing to notice is that the idea of Socialism is bound up,

more or less inextricably, with the idea of machine-production. Socialism

is essentially an urban creed. It grew up more or less concurrently with

industrialism, it has always had its roots in the town proletariat and the

town intellectual, and it is doubtful whether it could ever have arisen in

any but an industrial society. Granted industrialism, the idea of Socialism

presents itself naturally, because private ownership is only tolerable when

every individual (or family or other unit) is at least moderately self-

supporting; but the effect of industrialism is to make it impossible for

anyone to be self-supporting even for a moment.

Industrialism, once it

rises above a fairly low level, must lead to some form of collectivism. Not

necessarily to Socialism, of course; conceivably it might lead to the

Slave-State of which Fascism is a kind of prophecy. And the converse is

also true. Machine-production suggests Socialism, but Socialism as a world-

system implies machine-production, because it demands certain things not

compatible with a primitive way of life. It demands, for instance, constant

intercommunication and exchange of goods between all parts of the earth; it

demands some degree of centralized control; it demands an approximately

equal standard of life for all human beings and probably a certain $\,$

uniformity of education. We may take it, therefore, that any world in which

Socialism was a reality would be at least as highly mechanized as the

United States at this moment, probably much more so. In any case, no

Socialist would think of denying this. The Socialist world is always

pictured as a completely mechanized, immensely organized world, depending

on the machine as the civilizations of antiquity depend on the slave.

So far so good, or so bad. Many, perhaps a majority, of thinking

people are not in love with machine-civilization, but everyone who is not a

fool knows that it is nonsense to talk at this moment about scrapping the

machine. But the unfortunate thing is that Socialism, as usually presented,

is bound up with the idea of mechanical progress, not merely as a necessary

development but as an end in itself, almost as a kind of religion. This

idea is implicit in, for instance, most of the propagandist stuff that is

written about the rapid mechanical advance in Soviet Russia (the Dneiper

dam, tractors, etc., etc.). Karel Capek hits it off well enough in the

horrible ending of R.U.R., when the Robots, having slaughtered the last

human being, announce their intention to 'build many houses' (just for the

sake of building houses, you see). The kind of person who most readily

accepts Socialism is also the kind of person who views mechanical progress,

as such, with enthusiasm. And this is so much the case that Socialists are

often unable to grasp that the opposite opinion exists. As a rule the most

persuasive argument they can think of is to tell you that the present

mechanization of the world is as nothing to what we shall see when

Socialism is established. Where there is one aeroplane now, in those days

there will be fifty! All the work that is now done by hand will then be

done by machinery: everything that is now made of leather, wood, or stone

will be made of rubber, glass, or steel; there will be no disorder, no

loose ends, no wilder-nesses, no wild animals, no weeds, no disease, no

poverty, no pain--and so on and so forth. The Socialist world is to be

above all things an ordered world, an efficient world. But it is precisely

from that vision of the future as a sort of glittering Wells-world that

sensitive minds recoil. Please notice that this essentially fat-bellied

version of 'progress' is not an integral part of Socialist doctrine; but it

has come to be thought of as one, with the result that the temperamental

conservatism which is latent in all kinds of people is easily mobilized against Socialism.

Every sensitive person has moments when he is suspicious of machinery

and to some extent of physical science. But it is important to sort out the

various motives, which have differed greatly at different times, for

hostility to science and machinery, and to disregard the jealousy of the

modem literary gent who hates science because
science has stolen

literature's thunder. The earliest full-length attack on science and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

machinery that I am acquainted with is in the third

part of Gulliver's

Travels. But Swift's attack, though brilliant as a tour de force, is

irrelevant and even silly, because it is written from the standpoint--

perhaps this seems a queer thing to say of the author of Gulliver's Trawls

--of a man who lacked imagination. To Swift, science was merely a kind of

futile muckraking and the machines were non-sensical contraptions that

would never work. His standard was that of practical usefulness, and he

lacked the vision to see that an experiment which is not demonstrably

useful at the moment may yield results in the future. Elsewhere in the book

he names it as the best of all achievements 'to make two blades of grass

grow where one grew before'; not 'seeing, apparently, that this is just

what the machine can do. A little later the despised machines began

working, physical science increased its scope, and there came the

celebrated conflict between religion and science which agitated our

grandfathers. That conflict is over and both sides have retreated and

claimed a victory, but an anti-scientific bias still lingers in the minds

of most religious believers. All through the nineteenth century protesting

voices were raised against science and machinery (see Dickens's Hard Times, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

for instance), but usually for the rather shallow reason that industrialism $\,$

in its first stages was cruel and ugly. Samuel Butler's attack on the

machine in the well-known chapter of Erewhon is a different matter. But

Butler himself lives in 'a less desperate age than our own, an age in which

it was still possible for a first-rate man to be a dilettante part of the

time, and therefore the whole thing appeared to him as a kind of

intellectual exercise. He saw clearly enough our abject dependence on the

machine, but instead of bothering to work out its consequences he preferred

to exaggerate it for the sake of what was not much more than a joke. It is

only in our own age, when mechanization has finally triumphed, that we can

actually feel the tendency of the machine to make a fully human life

impossible. There is probably no one capable of thinking and feeling who

has not occasionally looked at a gas-pipe chair and reflected that the

machine is the enemy of life. As a rule, however, this feeling is

instinctive rather than reasoned.

People know that in some way or another 'progress' is a swindle, but

they reach this conclusion by a kind of mental shorthand; my job here is to

supply the logical steps that are usually left out. But first one must ask,

what is the function of the machine? Obviously its primary function is to

save work, and the type of person to whom machine-civilization is entirely

acceptable seldom sees any reason for looking

further. Here for instance is

a person who claims, or rather screams, that he is thoroughly at home in

the modem mechanized world. I am quoting from World Without Faith, by Mr

John Beevers. This is what he says:

It is plain lunacy to say that the average L2 10s. to L4 a week man

of today is a lower type than an eighteenth-century farm labourer. Or than the labourer or peasant of any exclusively agricultural community now or in the past. It just isn't true. It is so damn silly to cry out about the civilizing effects of work in the fields and farmyards as against that done in a big locomotive works or an automobile factory. Work is a nuisance. We work because we have to and all work is done to provide us with leisure and the means of spending that leisure as enjoyably as possible.

And again:

Man is going to have time enough and power enough to hunt for his own heaven on earth without worrying about the super-natural one. The earth will be so pleasant a place that the priest and the parson won't be left with much of a tale to tell. Half the stuffing is knocked out of them by one neat blow. Etc., etc., etc.

There is a whole chapter to this effect (Chapter 4 of Mr Beevers's book), and it is of some interest as an exhibition of machine-worship in its most completely vulgar, ignorant, and half-baked form. It is the authentic voice of a large section of the modem world. Every aspirin-eater in the outer suburbs would echo it fervently. Notice the shrill wail of anger ('It just isn't troo-o-o!', etc.) with which Mr Beevers meets the suggestion that his grandfather may have been a

better man than himself;

and the still more horrible suggestion that if we returned to a simpler way

of life he might have to toughen his muscles with a job of work. Work, you

see, is done 'to provide us with leisure'. Leisure for what? Leisure to

become more like Mr Beevers, presumably. Though as a matter of fact, from $\,$

that line of talk about 'heaven on earth', you can make a fairly good guess

at what he would like civilization to be; a sort of Lyons Comer House

lasting in saecula saeculorum and getting bigger and noisier all the time.

And in any book by anyone who feels at home in the machine-world--in any

book by H. G. Wells, for instance--you will find passages of the same

kind. How often have we not heard it, that glutinously uplifting stuff

about 'the machines, our new race of slaves, which will set humanity free',

etc., etc., etc. To these people, apparently, the only danger of the

machine is its possible use for destructive purposes; as, for instance,

aero-planes are used in war. Barring wars and unforeseen disasters, the

future is envisaged as an ever more rapid march of mechanical progress;

machines to save work, machines to save thought, machines to save pain,

hygiene, efficiency, organization, more hygiene, more efficiency, more

organization, more machines--until finally you land up in the by now

familiar Wellsian Utopia, aptly caricatured by Huxley in Brave New World,

the paradise of little fat men. Of course in their day-dreams of the future

the little fat men are neither fat nor little; they are Men Like Gods. But

why should they be? All mechanical progress is towards greater and greater

efficiency; ultimately, therefore, towards a world in which nothing goes

wrong. But in a world in which nothing went wrong, many of the qualities

which Mr Wells regards as 'godlike' would be no more valuable than the $\,$

animal faculty of moving the ears. The beings in Men Like Gods and The $\,$

Dream are represented, for example, as brave, generous, and physically

strong. But in a world from which physical danger had been banished--and

obviously mechanical progress tends to eliminate danger--would physical

courage be likely to survive? Could it survive? And why should physical

strength survive in a world where there was never the need for physical

labour? As for such qualities as loyalty, generosity, etc., in a world

where nothing went wrong, they would be not only irrelevant but probably

unimaginable. The truth is that many of the qualities we admire in $\ensuremath{\mathsf{human}}$

beings can only function in opposition to some kind of disaster, pain, or

difficulty; but the tendency of mechanical progress is to eliminate

disaster, pain, and difficulty. In books like The Dream and Men Like Gods

it is assumed that such qualities as strength, courage, generosity, etc.,

will be kept alive because they are comely qualities and necessary

attributes of a full human being. Presumably, for instance, the inhabitants

of Utopia would create artificial dangers in order to exercise their

courage, and do dumb-bell exercises to harden muscles which they would $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

never be obliged to use. And here you observe the

huge contradiction which

is usually present in the idea of progress. The tendency of mechanical

progress is to make your environment safe and soft; and yet you are

striving to keep yourself brave and hard. You are at the same moment

furiously pressing forward and desperately holding back. It is as though a

London stockbroker should go to his office in a suit of chain mail and

insist on talking medieval Latin. So in the last analysis the champion of $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,2,\ldots \right\}$

progress is also the champion of anachronisms.

Meanwhile I am assuming that the tendency of mechanical progress is to

make life safe and soft. This may be disputed, because at any given moment

the effect of some recent mechanical invention may appear to be the

opposite. Take for instance the transition from horses to motor vehicles.

At a first glance one might say, considering the enormous toll of road

deaths, that the motor-car does not exactly tend to make life safer. $\,$

Moreover it probably needs as much toughness to be a first-rate dirt-track

rider as to be a broncho-buster or to ride in the Grand National.

Nevertheless the tendency of all machinery is to become safer and easier to

handle. The danger of accidents would disappear if we chose to tackle our

road-planning problem seriously, as we shall do sooner or later; and

meanwhile the motor-car has evolved to a point at which anyone who is not

blind or paralytic can drive it after a few lessons. Even now it needs far

less nerve and skill to drive a car ordinarily well than to ride a horse

ordinarily well; in twenty years' time it may need no nerve or skill at

all. Therefore, one must say that, taking society as a whole, the result of

the transition from horses to cars has been an increase in human softness.

Presently somebody comes along with another invention, the aeroplane for

instance, which does not at first sight appear to make life safer. The $\,$

first men who went up in aeroplanes were superlatively brave, and even

today it must need an exceptionally good nerve to be a pilot. But the same

tendency as before is at work. The aeroplane, like the motor-car, will be

made foolproof; a million engineers are working,
almost unconsciously, in

that direction. Finally--this is the objective, though it may never quite

be reached--you will get an aeroplane whose pilot needs no more skill or

courage than a baby needs in its perambulator. And all mechanical progress

is and must be in this direction. A machine evolves by becoming more

efficient, that is, more foolproof; hence the objective of mechanical

progress is a foolproof world--which may or may not mean a world

inhabited by fools. Mr Wells would probably retort that the world can never

become fool-proof, because, however high a standard of efficiency you have

reached, there is always some greater difficulty ahead. For example (this

is Mr Wells's favourite idea--he has used it in goodness knows how many

perorations), when you have got this planet of ours perfectly into trim,

you start upon the enormous task of reaching and colonizing another. But

this is merely to push the objective further into the

future; the objective

itself remains the same. Colonize another planet, and the game of

mechanical progress begins anew; for the foolproof world you have

substituted the foolproof solar system--the foolproof universe. In tying

yourself to the ideal of mechanical efficiency, you tie yourself to the

ideal of softness. But softness is repulsive; and thus all progress is seen

to be a frantic struggle towards an objective which you hope and pray will

never be reached. Now and again, but not often, you meet somebody who

grasps that what is usually called progress also entails what is usually

called degeneracy, and who is nevertheless in favour of progress. Hence the

fact that in Mr Shaw's Utopia a statue was erected to Falstaff, as the

first man who ever made a speech in favour of cowardice.

But the trouble goes immensely deeper than this. Hitherto I have only

pointed out the absurdity of aiming at mechanical progress and also at the

preservation of qualities which mechanical progress makes unnecessary. The

question one has got to consider is whether there is any human activity

which would not be maimed by the dominance of the machine.

The function of the machine is to save work. In a fully mechanized

world all the dull drudgery will be done by machinery, leaving us free for

more interesting pursuits. So expressed, this sounds splendid. It makes one

sick to see half a dozen men sweating their guts out to dig a trench for a

water-pipe, when some easily devised machine would scoop the earth out in a

couple of minutes. Why not let the machine do the work and the men go and

do something else. But presently the question arises, what else are they to

do? Supposedly they are set free from 'work' in order that they may do

something which is not 'work'. But what is work and what is not work? Is it

work to dig, to carpenter, to plant trees, to fell trees, to ride, to fish,

to hunt, to feed chickens, to play the piano, to take photographs, to build

a house, to cook, to sew, to trim hats, to mend motor bicycles? All of

these things are work to somebody, and all of them are play to somebody.

There are in fact very few activities which cannot be classed either as

work or play according as you choose to regard them. The labourer set free

from digging may want to spend his leisure, or part of it, in playing the

piano, while the professional pianist may be only too glad to get out and

dig at the potato patch. Hence the antithesis between work, as something

intolerably tedious, and not-work, as something desirable, is false. The

truth is that when a human being is riot eating, drinking, sleeping, making

love, talking, playing games, or merely lounging about--and these things

will not fill up a lifetime--he needs work and usually looks for it,

though he may not call it work. Above the level of a third- or fourth-grade

moron, life has got to be lived largely in terms of effort. For man is not,

as the vulgarer hedonists seem to suppose, a kind of walking stomach; he

has also got a hand, an eye, and a brain. Cease to

use your hands, and you

have lopped off a huge chunk of your conscious-ness. And now consider again

those half-dozen men who were digging the trench for the water-pipe. $\ensuremath{\mathtt{A}}$

machine has set them free from digging, and they are going to amuse

themselves with something else--carpentering, for instance. But whatever

they want to do, they will find that another machine has set them free from

that. For in a fully mechanized world there would be no more need to

carpenter, to cook, to mend motor bicycles, etc., than there would be to

dig. There is scarcely anything, from catching a whale to carving a cherry

stone, that could not conceivably be done by machinery. The machine would

even encroach upon the activities we now class as 'art'; it is doing so

already, via the camera and the radio. Mechanize the world as fully as it

might be mechanized, and whichever way you turn there will be some machine

cutting you off from the chance of working--that is, of living.

At a first glance this might not seem to matter. Why should you not

get on with your 'creative work' and disregard the machines that would do $\,$

it for you? But it is not so simple as it sounds. Here am I, working eight

hours a day in an insurance office; in my spare time I want to do something

'creative', so I choose to do a bit of carpentering--to make myself a

table, for instance. Notice that from the very start there is a touch of

artificiality about the whole business, for the factories can turn me out a

far better table than I can make for myself. But even

when I get to work on

my table, it is not possible for me to feel towards it as the cabinet-maker

of a hundred years ago felt towards his table, still less as Robinson

Crusoe felt towards his. For before I start, most of the work has already

been done for me by machinery. The tools I use demand the minimum of skill.

I can get, for instance, planes which will cut out any moulding; the

cabinet-maker of a hundred years ago would have had to do the work with

chisel and gouge, which demanded real skill of eye and hand. The boards $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

buy are ready planed and the legs are ready turned by the lathe. I can even

needing to be fitted together; my work being reduced to driving in a few

pegs and using a piece of sandpaper. And if this is so at present, in the

mechanized future it will be enormously more so. With the tools and

materials available then, there will be no possibility of mistake, hence no

room for skill. Making a table will be easier and duller than peeling a

potato. In such circumstances it is nonsense to talk of 'creative work'. In

any case the arts of the hand (which have got to be transmitted by $\ensuremath{\mathsf{T}}$

apprenticeship) would long since have disappeared. Some of them have

disappeared already, under the competition of the machine. Look round any

country churchyard and see whether you can find a decently-cut tombstone

later than 1820. The art, or rather the craft, of stonework has died out so

completely that it would take centuries to revive it.

But it may be said, why not retain the machine and retain 'creative

work'? Why not cultivate anachronisms as a spare-time hobby? Many people

have played with this idea; it seems to solve with such beautiful ease the

problems set by the machine. The citizen of Utopia, we are told, coming

home from his daily two hours of turning a handle in the tomato-canning

factory, will deliberately revert to a more primitive way of life and

solace his creative instincts with a bit of fretwork, pottery-glazing, or

handloom-weaving. And why is this picture an absurdity--as it is, of

course? Because of a principle that is not always recognized, though always

acted upon: that so long as the machine is there, one is under an

obligation to use it. No one draws water from the well when he can turn on

the tap. One sees a good illustration of this in the matter of travel.

Everyone who has travelled by primitive methods in an undeveloped country

knows that the difference between that kind of travel and modern travel in

trains, cars, etc., is the difference between life and death. The nomad who

walks or rides, with his baggage stowed on a camel or an ox-cart, may

suffer every kind of discomfort, but at least he is living while he is

travelling; whereas for the passenger in an express train or a luxury liner

his journey is an interregnum, a kind of temporary death. And yet so long

as the railways exist, one has got to travel by train--or by car or

aeroplane. Here am I, forty miles from London. When I want to go up to $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

London why do I not pack my luggage on to a mule and

set out on foot,

making a two days of it? Because, with the Green Line buses whizzing past

me every ten minutes, such a journey would be intolerably irksome. In order

that one may enjoy primitive methods of travel, it is necessary that no

other method should be available. No human being ever wants to do anything

in a more cumbrous way than is necessary. Hence the absurdity of that

picture of Utopians saving their souls with fretwork. In a world where

every-thing could be done by machinery, everything would be done by

machinery. Deliberately to revert to primitive methods to use archaic took,

to put silly little difficulties in your own way, would be a piece of

dilettantism, of pretty-pretty arty and craftiness. It would be like

solemnly sitting down to eat your dinner with stone implements. Revert to

handwork in a machine age, and you are back in Ye Olde Tea Shoppe or the

Tudor villa with the sham beams tacked to the wall.

The tendency of mechanical progress, then, is to frustrate the human

need for effort and creation. It makes unnecessary and even impossible the

activities of the eye and the hand. The apostle of 'progress' will

sometimes declare that this does not matter, but you can usually drive him

into a comer by pointing out the horrible lengths to which the process can

be carried. Why, for instance, use your hands at all--why use them even

for blowing your nose or sharpening a pencil? Surely you could fix some

kind of steel and rubber contraption to your shoulders and let your arms

wither into stumps of skin and bone? And so with every organ and every

faculty. There is really no reason why a human being should do more than

eat, drink, sleep, breathe, and procreate; everything else could be done

for him by machinery. Therefore the logical end of mechanical progress is

to reduce the human being to something resembling a brain in a bottle. That

is the goal towards which we are already moving, though, of course, we have

no intention of getting there; just as a man who drinks a bottle of whisky

a day does not actually intend to get cirrhosis of the liver. The implied

objective of 'progress' is--not exactly, perhaps, the brain in the

bottle, but at any rate some frightful subhuman depth of softness and

helplessness. And the unfortunate thing is that at present the word

'progress' and the word 'Socialism' are linked in-separably in almost

everyone's mind. The kind of person who hates machinery also takes it for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

granted to hate Socialism; the Socialist is always in favour of

mechanization, rationalization, modernization--or at least thinks that he

ought to be in favour of them. Quite recently, for instance, a prominent

I.L.P.'er confessed to me with a sort of wistful shame--as though it were

something faintly improper--that he was 'fond of horses'. Horses, you

see, belong to the vanished agricultural past, and all sentiment for the

past carries with it a vague smell of heresy. I do not believe that this

need necessarily be so, but undoubtedly it is so. And in itself it is quite

enough to explain the alienation of decent minds from

Socialism.

A generation ago every intelligent person was in some sense a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

revolutionary; nowadays it would be nearer the mark to say that every

intelligent person is a reactionary. In this connexion it is worth

comparing H. G. Wells's The Sleeper Awakes with Aldous Huxley's Brave New

World, written thirty years later. Each is a pessimistic Utopia, a vision

of a sort of prig's paradise in which all the dreams of the 'progressive'

person come true. Considered merely as a piece of imaginative construction

The Sleeper Awakes is, I think, much superior, but it suffers from vast

contradictions because of the fact that Wells, as the arch-priest of

'progress', cannot write with any conviction against 'progress'. He draws a

picture of a glittering, strangely sinister world in which the privileged $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

classes live a life of shallow gutless hedonism, and the workers, reduced $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

to a state of utter slavery and sub-human ignorance, toil like troglodytes

in caverns underground. As soon as one examines this idea--it is further

developed in a splendid short story in Stories of Space and Time--one

sees its inconsistency. For in the immensely mechanized world that Wells is

imagining, why should the workers have to work harder than at present?

Obviously the tendency of the machine is to eliminate work, not to increase

it. In the machine-world the workers might be enslaved, ill-treated, and

even under-fed, but they certainly would not be condemned to ceaseless

manual toil; because in that case what would be the

function of the

machine? You can have machines doing all the work or human beings doing all

the work, but you can't have both. Those armies of underground workers,

with their blue uniforms and their debased,

half-human language, are only

put in 'to make your flesh creep'. Wells wants to suggest that 'progress'

might take a wrong turning; but the only evil he cares to imagine is

inequality--one class grabbing all the wealth and power and oppressing

the others, apparently out of pure spite. Give it quite a small twist, he

seems to suggest, overthrow the privileged class--change over from world-

capitalism to Socialism, in fact--and all will be well. The machine-

civilization is to continue, but its products are to be shared out equally.

The thought he dare not face is that the machine itself may be the enemy.

So in his more characteristic Utopias (The Dream, Men Like Gods, etc.), he

returns to optimism and to a vision of humanity, 'liberated' by the

machine, as a race of enlightened sunbathers whose sole topic of

conversation is their own superiority to their ancestors. Brave New World

belongs to a later time and to a generation which has seen through the

swindle of 'progress'. It contains its own contradictions (the most

important of them is pointed out in Mr John

Strachey's The Coming Struggle

for Power), but it is at least a memorable assault on the more fat-bellied $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

type of perfectionism. Allowing for the exaggerations of caricature, it

probably expresses what a majority of thinking people feel about machine-

civilization.

The sensitive person's hostility to the machine is in one sense

unrealistic, because of the obvious fact that the machine has come to stay.

But as an attitude of mind there is a great deal to be said for it. The

machine has got to be accepted, but it is probably better to accept it

rather as one accepts a drug--that is, grudgingly and suspiciously. Like

a drug, the machine is useful, dangerous, and habit-forming. The oftener

one surrenders to it the tighter its grip becomes.

You have only to look

about you at this moment to realize with what sinister speed the machine is

getting us into its power. To begin with, there is the frightful debauchery

of taste that has already been effected by a century of mechanization. This

is almost too obvious and too generally admitted to need pointing out. But

as a single instance, take taste in its narrowest sense--the taste for

decent food. In the highly mechanized countries, thanks to tinned food,

cold storage, synthetic flavouring matters, etc., the palate is almost a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

dead organ. As you can see by looking at any greengrocer's shop, what the

majority of English people mean by an apple is a lump of highly-coloured

cotton wool from America or Australia; they will devour these things,

apparently with pleasure, and let the English apples rot under the trees.

It is the shiny, standardized, machine-made look of the American apple that

appeals to them; the superior taste of the English apple is something they

simply do not notice. Or look at the factory-made,

foil-wrapped cheese and

'blended' butter in any grocer's; look at the hideous rows of tins which

usurp more and more of the space in any food-shop, even a dairy; look at a

sixpenny Swiss roll or a twopenny ice-cream; look at the filthy chemical

by-product that people will pour down their throats under the name of beer.

Wherever you look you will see some slick machine-made article triumphing

over the old-fashioned article that still tastes of something other than

sawdust. And what applies to food applies also to furniture, houses,

clothes, books, amusements, and everything else that makes up our

environment. There are now millions of people, and they are increasing

every year, to whom the blaring of a radio is not only a more accept-able

but a more normal background to their thoughts than the lowing of cattle or

the song of birds. The mechanization of the world could never proceed very

far while taste, even the taste-buds of the tongue, remained uncorrupted,

be-cause in that case most of the products of the machine would be simply

unwanted. In a healthy world there would be no demand for tinned foods,

aspirins, gramophones, gaspipe chairs, machine guns, daily newspapers,

telephones, motor-cars, etc., etc.; and on the other hand there would be a

constant demand for the things the machine cannot produce. But meanwhile

the machine is here, and its corrupting effects are almost irresistible.

One inveighs against it, but one goes on using it. Even a bare-arse savage,

given the chance, will learn the vices of civilization within a few months.

Mechanization leads to the decay of taste, the decay of taste leads to the

demand for machine-made articles and hence to more mechanization, and so \boldsymbol{a}

vicious circle is established.

But in addition to this there is a tendency for the mechanization of

the world to proceed as it were automatically, whether we want it or not.

This is due to the fact that in modem Western man the faculty of mechanical

invention has been fed and stimulated till it has reached almost the status

of an instinct. People invent new machines and improve existing ones almost

unconsciously, rather as a somnambulist will go on working in his sleep. In

the past, when it was taken for granted that life on this planet is harsh

or at any rate laborious, it Seemed the natural fate to go on using the

clumsy implements of your forefathers, and only a few eccentric persons,

centuries apart, proposed innovations; hence throughout enormous ages such

things as the ox-cart, the plough, the sickle, etc., remained radically

unchanged. It is on record that screws have been in use since remote

antiquity and yet that it was not till the middle of the nineteenth century

that anyone thought of making screws with points on them, for several

thousand years they remained flat-ended and holes had to be drilled for

them before they could be inserted. In our own epoch such a thing would be

unthinkable. For almost every modem Western man has his inventive faculty

to some extent developed; the Western man invents machines as naturally as

the Polynesian islander swims. Give a Western man a

job of work and he

immediately begins devising a machine that would do it for him; give him a

machine and he thinks of ways of improving it. I understand this tendency

well enough, for in an ineffectual sort of way I have that type of mind

myself. I have not either the patience or the mechanical skill to devise

any machine that would work, but I am perpetually seeing, as it were, the

ghosts of possible machines that might save me the trouble of using my

brain or muscles. A person with a more definite mechanical turn would

probably construct some of them and put them into operation. But under our

present economic system, whether he constructed them--or rather, whether

anyone else had the benefit of them--would depend upon whether they were

commercially valuable. The Socialists are right, therefore, when they claim

that the rate of mechanical progress will be much more rapid once Socialism

is established. Given a mechanical civilization the process of invention

and improvement will always continue, but the tendency of capitalism is to

slow it down, because under capitalism any invention which does not promise

fairly immediate profits is neglected; some, indeed, which threaten to

reduce profits are suppressed almost as ruthlessly as the flexible glass

mentioned by Petronius.[For example: Some years ago someone invented a

gramophone needle that would last for decades. One of the big gramophone

companies bought up the patent rights, and that was the last that was ever

beard of it.] Establish Socialism--remove the profit principle--and the

inventor will have a free hand. The mechanization of the world, already

rapid enough, would be or at any rate could be enormously accelerated.

And this prospect is a slightly sinister one, because it is obvious

even now that the process of mechanization is out of control. It is

happening merely because humanity has got the habit. A chemist perfects a

new method of synthesizing rubber, or a mechanic devises a new pattern of

gudgeon-pin. Why? Not for any clearly understood purpose, but simply from

the impulse to invent and improve, which has now become instinctive. Put a

pacifist to work in a bomb-factory and in two months he will be devising a

new type of bomb. Hence the appearance of such diabolical things as poison

gases, which are not expected even by their inventors to be beneficial to

humanity. Our attitude towards such things as poison gases ought to be the

attitude of the king of Brobdingnag towards gunpowder; but because we live

in a mechanical and scientific age we are infected with the notion that,

whatever else happens, 'progress' must continue and knowledge must never be

suppressed. Verbally, no doubt, we would agree that machinery is made for

man and not man for machinery; in practice any attempt to check the

development of the machine appears to us an attack on knowledge and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

therefore a kind of blasphemy. And even if the whole of humanity suddenly

revolted against the machine and decided to escape to a simpler way of

life, the escape would still be immensely difficult. It would not do, as in

Butler's Erewhon, to smash every machine invented after a certain date; we

should also have to smash the habit of mind that would, almost

involuntarily, devise fresh machines as soon as the old ones were smashed.

And in all of us there is at least a tinge of that habit of mind. In every

country in the world the large army of scientists and technicians, with the

rest of us panting at their heels, are marching along the road of

'progress' with the blind persistence of a column of ants. Comparatively

few people want it to happen, plenty of people actively want it not to

happen, and yet it is happening. The process of mechanization has itself

become a machine, a huge glittering vehicle whirling us we are not certain

where, but probably towards the padded Wells-world and the brain in the bottle.

This, then, is the case against the machine. Whether it is a sound or

unsound case hardly matters. The point is that these or very Similar

arguments would be echoed by every person who is hostile to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

machine-civilization. And unfortunately, because of that nexus of thought,

'Socialism-progress-machinery-Russia-tractor-hygiene-m achinery-progress',

which exists in almost everyone's mind, it is usually the same person who

is hostile to Socialism. The kind of person who hates central heating and

gaspipe chairs is also the kind of person who, when you mention Socialism,

murmurs something about' beehive state' and moves away with a pained

expression. So far as my observation goes, very few

Socialists grasp why

this is so, or even that it is so. Get the more vocal type of Socialist

chapter, and see what kind of answer you get. As a matter of fact you will

get several answers; I am so familiar with them that I know them almost by heart.

In the first place he will tell you that it is impossible to 'go back'

(or to 'put back the hand of progress'--as though the hand of progress

hadn't been pretty violently put back several times in human history!), and

will then accuse you of being a medievalist and begin to descant upon the

horrors of the Middle Ages, leprosy, the Inquisition, etc. As a matter of

fact, most attacks upon the Middle Ages and the past generally by

apologists of modernity are beside the point, because their essential trick

is to project a modern man, with his squeamishness and his high standards

of comfort, into an age when such things were unheard of. But notice that

in any case this is not an answer. For a dislike of the mechanized future

does not imply the smallest reverence for any period of the past. D. H.

Lawrence, wiser than the medievalist, chose to idealize the Etruscans about

whom we know conveniently little. But there is no need to idealize even the

Etruscans or the Pelasgians, or the Aztecs, or the Sumerians, or any other

vanished and romantic people. When one pictures a desirable civilization,

one pictures it merely as an objective; there is no need to pretend that it

has ever existed in space and time. Press this point home, explain that you

wish to aim at making life simpler and harder instead of softer and more

complex, and the Socialist will usually assume that you want to revert to a

'state of nature'--meaning some stinking palaeolithic cave: as though

there were nothing between a flint scraper and the steel mills of

Sheffield, or between a skin coracle and the Queen Mary .

Finally, however, you will get an answer which is rather more to the

point and which runs roughly as follows: 'Yes, what you are saying is all

very well in its way. No doubt it would be very noble to harden ourselves

and do without aspirins and central heating and so forth. But the point is,

you see, that nobody seriously wants it. It would mean going back to an

agricultural way of life, which means beastly hard work and isn't at all

the same thing as playing at gardening. I don't want hard work, you don't

you do because you've never done a day's work in your life,' etc., etc.

Now this in a sense is true. It amounts to saying, 'We're soft--for

God's sake let's stay soft!' which at least is realistic. As I have pointed

out already, the machine has got us in its grip and to escape will be

immensely difficult. Nevertheless this answer is really an evasion, because

it fails to make dear what we mean when we say that we 'want' this or that.

I am a degenerate modem semi-intellectual who would

die if I did not get my

early morning cup of tea and my New Statesman every Friday. Clearly I do

not, in a sense, 'want' to return to a simpler,
harder, probably

agricultural way of life. In the same sense I don't 'want' to cut down my

drinking, to pay my debts, to take enough exercise, to be faithful to my

wife, etc., etc. But in another and more permanent sense I do want these

things, and perhaps in the same sense I want a civilization in which

'progress' is not definable as making the world safe for little fat men.

These that I have outlined are practically the only arguments that I have

been able to get from Socialists--thinking, book-trained Socialists--

when I have tried to explain to them just how they are driving away

possible adherents. Of course there is also the old $\ensuremath{\mathsf{argument}}$ that $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Socialism}}$

is going to arrive anyway, whether people like it or not, because of that

trouble-saving thing, 'historic necessity'. But 'historic necessity', or

rather the belief in it, has failed to survive Hitler.

Meanwhile the thinking person, by intellect usually left-wing but by

temperament often right-wing, hovers at the gate of the Socialist fold. He

is no doubt aware that he ought to be a Socialist. But he observes first

the dullness of individual Socialists, then the apparent flabbiness of

Socialist ideals, and veers away. Till quite recently it was natural to

veer towards indinerentism. Ten years ago, even five years ago, the typical

literary gent wrote books on baroque architecture and had a soul above

politics. But that attitude is becoming difficult and even unfashionable.

The times are growing harsher, the issues are clearer, the belief that

nothing, will ever change (i.e. that your dividends will always be safe) is

less prevalent. The fence on which the literary gent sits, once as $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

comfortable as the plush cushion of a cathedral stall, is now pinching his

bottom intolerably; more and more he shows a disposition to drop off on one

side or the other. It is interesting to notice how many of our leading

writers, who a dozen years ago were art for art's saking for all they were

worth and would have considered it too vulgar for words even to vote at a

general election, are now taking a definite political
standpoint; while

most of the younger writers, at least those of them who are not mere

footlers, have been 'political' from the start. I believe that when the

pinch comes there is a terrible danger that the main movement of the $\,$

intelligentsia will be towards Fascism. Just how soon the pinch will come

it is difficult to say; it depends, probably, upon events in Europe; but it

may be that within two years or even a year we shall have reached the

decisive moment. That will also be the moment when every person with any

brains or any decency will know in his bones that he ought to be on the

Socialist side. But he will not necessarily come there of his own accord;

there are too many ancient prejudices standing in the way. He will have to $\,$

be persuaded, and by methods that imply an understanding of his viewpoint.

Socialists cannot afford to waste any more time in

preaching to the

converted. Their job now is to make Socialists as rapidly as possible;

instead of which, all too often, they are making Fascists.

When I speak of Fascism in England, I am not necessarily thinking of

Mosley and his pimpled followers. English Fascism, when it arrives, is

likely to be of a sedate and subtle kind (presumably, at any rate at first,

it won't be called Fascism), and it is doubtful whether a Gilbert and

Sullivan heavy dragoon of Mosley's stamp would ever be much more than a

joke to the majority of English people; though even Mosley will bear

watching, for experience shows (vide the careers of Hitler, Napoleon III) $\,$

that to a political climber it is sometimes an advantage not to be taken

too seriously at the beginning of his career. But what I am thinking of at $\ensuremath{\,^{\circ}}$

this moment is the Fascist attitude of mind, which beyond any doubt is

gaining ground among people who ought to know better. Fascism as it appears

in the intellectual is a sort of mirror-image--not actually of Socialism

but of a plausible travesty of Socialism. It boils down to a determination

to do the opposite of whatever the mythical Socialist does. If you present

Socialism in a bad and misleading light--if you let people imagine that

it does not mean much more than pouring European civilization down the sink

at the command of Marxist prigs--you risk driving the intellectual into

Fascism. You frighten him into a sort of angry defensive attitude in which

he simply refuses to listen to the Socialist case.

Some such attitude is

already quite clearly discernible in writers like Pound, Wyndham Lewis, Roy

Gampbell, etc., in most of the Roman Catholic writers and many of the $\,$

Douglas Credit group, in certain popular novelists, and even, if one looks

below the surface, in so-superior conservative highbrows like Eliot and his

countless followers. If you want some unmistakable illustrations of the

growth of Fascist feeling in England, have a look at some of the

innumerable letters that were written to the Press during the Abyssinian

war, approving the Italian action, and also the howl of glee that went up

from. both Catholic and Anglican pulpits (see the Daily Mail of $17~\mathrm{August}$

1936) over the Fascist rising in Spain.

In order to combat Fascism it is necessary to understand it, which

involves admitting that it contains some good as well as much evil. In

practice, of course, it is merely an infamous tyranny, and its methods of

attaining and holding power are such that even its most ardent apologists

prefer to talk about something else. But the underlying feeling of Fascism,

the feeling that first draws people into the Fascist camp, may be less

contemptible. It is not always, as the Saturday Review would lead one to

suppose, a squealing terror of the Bolshevik bogey-man. Everyone who has

given the movement so much as a glance knows that the $\operatorname{rank-and-file}$ Fascist

is often quite a well-meaning person--quite genuinely anxious, for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

instance, to better the lot of the unemployed. But more important than this $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

is the fact that Fascism draws its strength from the good as well as the

bad varieties of conservatism. To anyone with a feeling for tradition and

for discipline it comes with its appeal ready-made. Probably it is very

easy, when you have had a bellyful of the more tactless kind of Socialist

propaganda, to see Fascism as the last line defence of all that is good in

European civilization. Even the Fascist bully at his symbolic worst, with

rubber truncheon in one hand and castor oil bottle in the other, does not

necessarily feel himself a bully; more probably he feels like Roland in the

pass at Roncevaux, defending Christendom against the barbarian. We have got

to admit that if Fascism is everywhere advancing, this is largely the fault

of Socialists themselves. Partly it is due to the mistaken Communist tactic

of sabotaging democracy, i.e. sawing off the branch you are sitting on; but

still more to the fact that Socialists have, so to speak, presented their

case wrong side foremost. They have never made it sufficiently clear that

the essential aims of Socialism are justice and liberty. With their eyes

glued to economic facts, they have proceeded on the assumption that man has

no soul, and explicitly or implicitly they have set up the goal of \boldsymbol{a}

materialistic Utopia. As a result Fascism has been able to play upon every

instinct that revolts against hedonism and a cheap conception of

'progress'. It has been able to pose as the upholder of the ${\tt European}$

tradition, and to appeal to Christian belief, to patriotism, and to the

military virtues. It is far worse than useless to

write Fascism off as

'mass sadism', or some easy phrase of that kind. If you pretend that it is

merely an aberration which will presently pass off of its own accord, you

are dreaming a dream from which you will awake when somebody coshes you

with a rubber truncheon. The only possible course is to examine the Fascist

case, grasp that there is something to be said for it, and then make it

clear to the world that whatever good Fascism contains is also implicit in Socialism.

At present the situation is desperate. Even if nothing worse befalls

us, there are the conditions which I described in the earlier part of this

book and which are not going to improve under our present economic system.

Still more urgent is the danger of Fascist domination in Europe. And unless

Socialist doctrine, in an effective form, can be diffused widely and very

quickly, there is no certainty that Fascism will ever be overthrown. For

Socialism is the only real enemy that Fascism has to face. The capitalist-

imperialist governments, even though they themselves are about to be

plundered, will not fight with any conviction against Fascism as such. Our

rulers, those of them who understand the issue, would probably prefer to

hand over every square inch of the British Empire to Italy, Germany, and $\,$

Japan than to see Socialism triumphant. It was easy to laugh at Fascism

when we imagined that it was based on hysterical nationalism, because it

seemed obvious that the Fascist states, each regarding itself as the chosen

people and patriotic contra mundum, would clash with one another. But

nothing of the kind is happening. Fascism is now an international movement,

which means not only that the Fascist nations can combine for purposes of

loot, but that they are groping, perhaps only half consciously as yet,

towards a world-system. For the vision of the totalitarian state there is

being substituted the vision of the totalitarian world. As I pointed out

earlier, the advance of machine-technique must lead ultimately to some form

of collectivism, but that form need not necessarily be equalitarian; that

is, it need not be Socialism. Pace the economists, it is quite easy to

imagine a world-society, economically

collectivist -- that is, with the

profit principle eliminated--but with all political, military, and

educational power in the hands of a small caste of rulers and their bravos.

That or something like it is the objective of Fascism. And that, of course,

is the slave-state, or rather the slave-world; it would probably be a

stable form of society, and the chances are, considering the enormous

wealth of the world if scientifically exploited, that the slaves would be

well-fed and contented. It is usual to speak of the Fascist objective as

the 'beehive state', which does a grave injustice to bees. A world of

rabbits ruled by stoats would be nearer the mark. It is against this

beastly possibility that we have got to combine.

The only thing for which we can combine is the underlying ideal of

Socialism; justice and liberty. But it is hardly

ideal 'underlying'. It is almost completely forgotten. It has been buried beneath layer after layer of doctrinaire priggishness, party squabbles, and half-baked 'progressivism' until it is like a diamond hidden under a mountain of dung. The job of the Socialist is to get it out again. Justice and liberty! Those are the words that have got to ring like a bugle across the world. For a long time past, certainly for the last ten years, the devil has had all the best tunes. We have reached a stage when the very word 'Socialism' calls up, on the one hand, a picture of aeroplanes, tractors, and huge glittering factories of glass and concrete; on the other, a picture of vegetarians with wilting beards, of Bolshevik commissars (half gangster, half gramophone), of earnest ladies in sandals, shock-headed Marxists chewing polysyllables, escaped Quakers, birth-control fanatics, and Labour Party backstairs-crawlers. Socialism, at least in this island, does not smell any longer of revolution and the overthrow of tyrants; it smells of crankishness, machine-worship, and the stupid cult of Russia. Unless you can remove that smell, and very rapidly, Fascism may win.

strong enough to call this

13

And finally, is there anything one can do about it?

In the first part of this book I illustrated, by a

few brief

sidelights, the kind of mess we are in; in this second part I have been

trying to explain why, in my opinion, so many normal decent people are

repelled by the only remedy, namely by Socialism. Obviously the most urgent

need of the next few years is to capture those normal decent ones before

Fascism plays its trump card. I do not want to raise here the question of

parties and political expedients. More important than any party label

(though doubtless the mere menace of Fascism will presently bring some kind

of Popular Front into existence) is the diffusion of Socialist doctrine in

an effective form. People have got to be made ready to act as Socialists.

There are, I believe, countless people who, without being aware of it, are

in sympathy with the essential aims of Socialism, and who could be won over $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

almost with-out a struggle if only one could find the word that would move

them. Everyone who knows the meaning of poverty, everyone who has a genuine

hatred of tyranny and war, is on the Socialist side, potentially. My job

here, therefore, is to suggest--necessarily in very general terms--how

a reconciliation might be effected between Socialism and its more

intelligent enemies.

First, as to the enemies themselves--I mean all those people who

grasp that capitalism is evil but who are conscious of a sort of queasy,

shuddering sensation when Socialism is mentioned. As I have pointed out,

this is traceable to two main causes. One is the personal inferiority of

many individual Socialists; the other is the fact that Socialism is too

often coupled with a fat-bellied, godless conception of 'progress' which

revolts anyone with a feeling for tradition or the rudiments of an

aesthetic sense. Let me take the second point first.

The distaste for 'progress' and machine-civilization which is so

common among sensitive people is only defensible as an attitude of mind. It

is not valid as a reason for rejecting Socialism, because it presupposes an

alternative which does not exist. When you say, 'I object to mechanization

and standardization--therefore I object to

Socialism', you are saying in

nonsense. We are all dependent upon the machine, and if the machines

stopped working most of us would die. You may hate the machine-

civilization, probably you are right to hate it, but for the present there

can be no question of accepting or rejecting it. The $\operatorname{machine-civilization}$

is here, and it can only be criticized from the inside, because all of us

are inside it. It is only romantic fools who natter themselves that they

have escaped, like the literary gent in his Tudor cottage with bathroom h.

and c., and the he-man who goes off to live a 'primitive' life in the

jungle with a Mannlicher rifle and four wagon-loads of tinned food. And

almost certainly the machine-civilization will continue to triumph. There

is no reason to think that it will destroy itself or stop functioning of

its own accord. For some time past it has been

fashionable to say that war is presently going to 'wreck civilization' altogether; but, though the next full-sized war will certainly be horrible enough to make all previous ones seem a joke, it is immensely unlikely that it will put a stop to mechanical progress. It is true that a very vulnerable country like England, and perhaps the whole of western Europe, could be reduced to chaos by a few thousand well-placed bombs, but no war is at present thinkable which could wipe out industrialization in all countries simultaneously. We may take it that the return to a simpler, free, less mechanized way of life, however desirable it may be, is not going to happen. This is not fatalism, it is merely acceptance of facts. It is meaningless to oppose Socialism on the ground that you object to the beehive State, for the beehive State is here. The choice is not, as yet, between a human and an inhuman world. It is simply between Socialism and Fascism, which at its

The job of the thinking person, therefore, is not to reject Socialism but to make up his mind to humanize it. Once Socialism is in a way to being established, those who can see through the swindle of 'progress' will probably find themselves resisting. In fact, it is their special function to do so. In the machine-world they have got to be a sort of permanent opposition, which is not the same thing as being an obstructionist or a traitor. But in this I am speaking of the future. For the moment the only

very best is Socialism with the virtues left out.

possible course for any decent person, however much of a Tory or an

anarchist by temperament, is to work for the establishment of Socialism.

Nothing else can save us from the misery of the present or the nightmare of

the future. To oppose Socialism now, when twenty million Englishmen are

underfed and Fascism has conquered half Europe, is suicidal. It is like

starting a civil war when the Goths are crossing the frontier.

Therefore it is all the more important to get rid of that mere nervous

prejudice against Socialism which is not founded on any serious objection.

As I have pointed out already, many people who are not repelled by $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

Socialism are repelled by Socialists. Socialism, as now presented, is

unattractive largely because it appears, at any rate from the outside, to

be the plaything of cranks, doctrinaires, parlour Bolsheviks, and so forth.

But it is worth remembering that this is only so because the cranks,

doctrinaires, etc., have been allowed to get there first ${\tt J}$ if the movement

were invaded by better brains and more common decency, the objectionable

types would cease to dominate it. For the present one must just set one's

teeth and ignore them; they will loom much smaller when the movement has

been humanized. Besides, they are irrelevant. We have got to fight for

justice and liberty, and Socialism does mean justice and liberty when the

nonsense is stripped off it. It is only the essentials that are worth

remembering. To recoil from Socialism because so many individual Socialists

are inferior people is as absurd as refusing to travel by train because you dislike the ticket-collector's face.

And secondly, as to the Socialist himself--more especially the vocal, tract-writing type of Socialist.

We are at a moment when it is desperately necessary for left-wingers

of all complexions to drop their differences and hang together. Indeed this

is already happening to a small extent. Obviously, then, the more

intransigent kind of Socialist has now got to ally himself with people who

are not in perfect agreement with him. As a rule he is rightly unwilling to

do so, because he sees the very real danger of watering the whole Socialist

movement down to some kind of pale-pink humbug even more ineffectual than $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

the parliamentary Labour Party. At the moment, for instance, there is great

danger that the Popular Front which Fascism will presumably bring into

existence will not be genuinely Socialist in character, but will simply be

a manoeuvre against German and Italian (not English) Fascism. Thus the need $\,$

to unite against Fascism might draw the Socialist into alliance with his

very worst enemies. But the principle to go upon is this: that you are

never in danger of allying yourself with the wrong people provided that you

keep the essentials of your movement in the foreground. And what are the

essentials of Socialism? What is the mark of a real Socialist? I suggest

that the real Socialist is one who wishes--not merely conceives it as

desirable, but actively wishes -- to see tyranny

overthrown. But I fancy

that the majority of orthodox Marxists would not accept that definition, or

would only accept it very grudgingly. Sometimes, when I listen to these

people talking, and still more when I read their books, I get the

impression that, to them, the whole Socialist movement is no more than a $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

kind of exciting heresy-hunt--a leaping to and fro of frenzied witch-

doctors to the beat of tom-toms and the tune of 'Fee fi, fo, fum, I smell

the blood of a right-wing deviationist!' It is because of this kind of

thing that it is so much easier to feel yourself a Socialist when you are

among working-class people. The working-class Socialist, like the working-

class Catholic, 's weak on doctrine and can hardly open his mouth without

uttering a heresy, but he has the heart of the matter in him. He does grasp

the central fact that Socialism means the overthrow of tyranny, and the

'Marseillaise', if it were translated for his benefit, would appeal to him

more deeply than any learned treatise on dialectical materialism. At this

moment it is waste of time to insist that acceptance of Socialism means

acceptance of the philosophic side of Marxism, plus adulation of Russia.

The Socialist movement has not time to be a league of dialectical

materialists; it has got to be a league of the oppressed against the

oppressors. You have got to attract the man who means business, and you

have got to drive away the mealy-mouthed Liberal who wants foreign Fascism

destroyed in order that he may go on drawing his dividends

peacefully--the type of hum-bug who passes resolutions 'against
Fascism and Communism', i.e. against rats and rat-poison. Socialism means
the overthrow of tyranny, at home as well as abroad. So long as you keep
that fact well to the front, you will never be in much doubt as to who
are your real supporters. As for minor
differences--and the profoundest
philosophical difference is unimportant compared with saving the twenty
million Englishmen whose bones are rotting from malnutrition--the time to
argue about them is afterwards.

I do not think the Socialist need make any sacrifice of essentials, but certainly he will have to make a great sacrifice

of externals. It would

help enormously, for instance, if the smell of crankishness which still

clings to the Socialist movement could be dispelled. If only the sandals $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

and the pistachio-coloured shirts could be put in a pile and burnt, and

every vegetarian, teetotaller, and creeping Jesus sent home to Welwyn

Garden City to do his yoga exercises quietly! But that, I am afraid, is not

going to happen. What is possible, however, is for the more intelligent $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

kind of Socialist to stop alienating possible supporters in silly and quite

irrelevant ways. There are so many minor priggishness which could so easily

be dropped. Take for instance the dreary attitude of the typical Marxist

towards literature. Out of the many that come into $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ $\ensuremath{\mathsf{mind}},$ I will give

just one example. It sounds trivial, but it isn't. In the old Worker's

Weekly (one of the forerunners of the Daily Worker)

there used to be a

column of literary chat of the 'Books on the Editor's Table' type. For

several weeks miming there had been a certain amount of talk about

Shakespeare; whereupon an incensed reader wrote to say, 'Dear Comrade, we

don't want to hear about these bourgeois writers like Shakespeare. Can't

you give us something a bit more proletarian?' etc., etc. The editor's

reply was simple. 'If you will turn to the index of Marx's Capital,' he

wrote, 'you will find that Shakespeare is mentioned several times.' And

please notice that this was enough to silence the objector. Once

Shakespeare had received the benediction of Marx, he became respectable.

That is the mentality that drives ordinary sensible people away from the

Socialist movement. You do not need to care about Shakespeare to be

repelled by that kind of thing. Again, there is the horrible jargon that

nearly all Socialists think it necessary to employ. When the ordinary

person hears phrases like 'bourgeois ideology' and
'proletarian solidarity'

and 'expropriation of the expropriators', he is not inspired by them, he is

merely disgusted. Even the single word 'Comrade' has done its dirty little

bit towards discrediting the Socialist movement. How many a waverer has

halted on the brink, gone perhaps to some public meeting and watched self- $\,$

conscious Socialists dutifully addressing one another as 'Comrade', and

then slid away, disillusioned, into the nearest four-ale bar! And his

instinct is sound; for where is the sense of sticking on to yourself $\boldsymbol{\mathsf{a}}$

ridiculous label which even after long practice can hardly be mentioned without a gulp of shame? It is fatal to let the ordinary inquirer get away with the idea that being a Socialist means wearing sandals and burbling about dialectical materialism. You have got to make it clear that there is room in the Socialist movement for human beings, or the game is up.

And this raises a great difficulty. It means that the issue of class, as distinct from mere economic status, has got to be faced more realistically than it is being faced at present.

I devoted three chapters to discussing the class-difficulty. The principal fact that will have emerged, I think, is that though the English class-system has outlived its usefulness, it has outlived it and shows no signs of dying. It greatly confuses the issue to assume, as the orthodox Marxist so often does (see for instance Mr Alee Brown's in some ways interesting book. The Fate of the Middle Classes), that social status is determined solely by income. Economically, no doubt, there are only two classes, the rich and the poor, but socially there is a whole hierarchy of classes, and the manners and traditions learned by each class in childhood are not only very different but--this is the essential point--generally persist from birth to death. 'Hence the anomalous individuals that you find in every class of society. You find writers like Wells and Bennett who have grown immensely rich and have yet preserved intact their lower-middle-class

Nonconformist prejudices; you find millionaires who cannot pronounce their

aitches; you find petty shopkeepers whose income is far lower than that of

the bricklayer and who, nevertheless, consider themselves (and are

considered) the bricklayer's social superiors; you
find board-school boys

ruling Indian provinces and public-school men touting vacuum cleaners. If

social stratification corresponded precisely to economic stratification,

the public-school man would assume a cockney accent the day his income

dropped below L200 a year. But does he? On the contrary, he immediately

becomes twenty times more Public School than before. He clings to the Old

School Tie as to a life-line. And even the aitchless millionaire, though

sometimes he goes to an elocutionist and leams a B.B.C. accent, seldom

succeeds in disguising himself as completely as he would like to. It is in

fact very difficult to escape, culturally, from the class into which you have been born.

As prosperity declines, social anomalies grow commoner. You don't get

more aitchless millionaires, but you do get more and more public-school men

touting vacuum cleaners and more and more small shopkeepers driven into the $\,$

workhouse. Large sections of the middle class are being gradually

proletarianized; but the important point is that they
do not, at any rate

in the first generation, adopt a proletarian outlook. Here am I, for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

instance, with a bourgeois upbringing and a working-class income. Which

class do I belong to? Economically I belong to the

working class, but it is

almost impossible for me to think of myself as anything but a member of the

bourgeoisie. And supposing I had to take sides, whom should I side with,

the upper class which is trying to squeeze me out of existence, or the

working class whose manners are not my manners? It is probable that $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

personally, in any important issue, would side with the working class. But

what about the tens or hundreds of thousands of others who are in

approximately the same position? And what about that far larger class,

running into millions this time--the office-workers and black-coated

employees of all kinds--whose traditions are less definitely middle class

but who would certainly not thank you if you called them proletarians? All

of these people have the same interests and the same enemies as the working

class. All are being robbed and bullied by the same system. Yet how many of

them realize it? When the pinch came nearly all of them would side with $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

their oppressors and against those who ought to be their allies. It is

quite easy to imagine a middle class crushed down to the worst depths of

poverty and still remaining bitterly

anti-working-class in sentiment; this

being, of course, a ready-made Fascist Party.

Obviously the Socialist movement has got to capture the exploited $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

middle class before it is too late; above all it must capture the office-

workers, who are so numerous and, if they knew how to combine, so powerful.

Equally obviously it has so far failed to do so. The very last person in $% \left\{ 1,2,\ldots ,n\right\}$

whom you can hope to find revolutionary opinions is a clerk or a commercial

traveller. Why? Very largely, I think, because of the 'proletarian' cant

with which Socialist propaganda is mixed up. In order to symbolize the

class war, there has been set up the more or less $\ensuremath{\mathsf{mythical}}$ figure of a

'proletarian', a muscular but downtrodden man in greasy overalls, in

contradistinction to a 'capitalist', a fat, wicked man in a top hat and fur $\ensuremath{\mathsf{L}}$

coat. It is tacitly assumed that there is no one in between; the truth

being, of course, that in a country like England about a quarter of the

population is in between. If you are going to harp on the 'dictatorship of

the proletariat', it is an elementary precaution to start by explaining who

the proletariat are. But because of the Socialist tendency to idealize the

manual worker as such, this has never been made sufficiently clear. How

many of the wretched shivering army of clerks and shopwalkers, who in some

ways are actually worse off than a miner or a dock-hand, think of

themselves as proletarians? A proletarian--so they have been taught to

think--means a man without a collar. So that when you try to move them by $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

talking about 'class war', you only succeed in scaring them; they forget

their incomes and remember their accents, and fly to the defence of the

class that is exploiting them.

Socialists have a big job ahead of them here. They have got to

demonstrate, beyond possibility of doubt, just where the line of cleavage

between exploiter and exploited comes. Once again it

is a question of

sticking to essentials; and the essential point here is that all people

with small, insecure incomes are in the same boat and ought to be fighting

on the same side. Probably we could do with a little less talk about'

robbed. But at any rate we must drop that misleading habit of pretending

that the only proletarians are manual labourers. It has got to be brought

home to the clerk, the engineer, the commercial traveller, the middle-class

man who has 'come down in the world', the village grocer, the lower-grade

civil servant, and all other doubtful cases that they are the proletariat,

and that Socialism means a fair deal for them as well as for the navvy and

the factory-hand. They must not be allowed to think that the battle is $\ \ \,$

between those who pronounce their aitches and those who don't; for if they

think that, they will join in on the side of the aitches.

I am implying that different classes must be persuaded to act together

without, for the moment, being asked to drop their class-differences. And

that sounds dangerous. It sounds rather too like the Duke of York's summer

camp and that dismal line of talk about

class-cooperation and putting our

shoulders to the wheel, which is eyewash or Fascism, or both. There can be

no cooperation between classes whose real interests are opposed. The $\,$

capitalist cannot cooperate with the proletarian. The cat cannot cooperate

with the mouse; and if the cat does suggest

cooperation and the mouse is

fool enough to agree, in a very little while the mouse will be disappearing

down the cat's throat. But it is always possible to cooperate so long as it

is upon a basis of common interests. The people who have got to act

together are all those who cringe to the boss and all those who shudder

when they think of the rent. This means that the small-holder has got to

ally himself with the factory-hand, the typist with the coal-miner, the

schoolmaster with the garage mechanic. There is some hope of getting them

to do so if they can be made to understand where their interest lies. But

this will not happen if their social prejudices, which in some of them are

at least as strong as any economic consideration, arc needlessly irritated.

There is, after all, a real difference of manners and traditions between a $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

bank clerk and a dock labourer, and the bank clerk's feeling of superiority

is very deeply rooted. Later on he will have to get rid of it, but this is

not a good moment for asking him. to do so. Therefore it would be a very

great advantage if that rather meaningless and mechanical bourgeois-

baiting, which is a part of nearly all Socialist propaganda, could be

dropped for the time being. Throughout left-wing thought and writing--and

the whole way through it, from the leading articles in the Daily Worker to $\,$

the comic columns in the News Chronicle--there runs an anti-genteel

tradition, a persistent and often very stupid gibing at genteel mannerisms

and genteel loyalties (or, in Communist jargon, 'bourgeois values'). It is

largely hum-bug, coming as it does from bourgeois-baiters who are bourgeois themselves, but it does great harm, because it allows a minor issue to block a major one. It directs attention away from the central fact that poverty is poverty, whether the tool you work with is a pick-axe or a fountain-pen.

Once again, here am I, with my middle-class origins and my income of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

about three pounds a week from all sources. For what I am worth it would be

better to get me in on the Socialist side than to turn me into a Fascist.

But if you are constantly bullying me about my 'bourgeois ideology', if you

give me to understand that in some subtle way I. am an inferior person $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

because I have never worked with my hands, you will only succeed in

antagonizing me. For you are telling me either that I am inherently useless

or that I ought to alter myself in some way that is beyond my power. $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

cannot proletarianize my accent or certain of my tastes and beliefs, and ${\tt I}$

would not if I could. Why should I? I don't ask anybody else to speak my

dialect; why should anybody else ask me to speak his? It would be far

better to take those miserable class-stigmata for granted and emphasize

them as little as possible. They are comparable to a race-difference, and

experience shows that one can cooperate with foreigners, even with

foreigners whom one dislikes, when it is really necessary. Economically, ${\tt I}$

am in the same boat with the miner, the navvy, and
the farm-hand; remind me

of that and I will fight at their side. But

culturally I am different from

the miner, the navvy, and the farm-hand: lay the emphasis on that and you

may arm me against them. If I were a solitary anomaly I should not matter, $\$

but what is true of myself is true of countless others. Every bank clerk

dreaming of the sack, every shop-keeper teetering on the brink of

bankruptcy, is in essentially the same position.

These are the sinking

 $\mbox{{\it middle class}}\,,$ and $\mbox{{\it most}}$ of them are clinging to their gentility under the

impression that it keeps them afloat. It is not good policy to start by

telling them to throw away the life-belt. There is a quite obvious danger

that in the next few years large sections of the middle class will make \boldsymbol{a}

sudden and violent swing to the Right. In doing so they may become

formidable. The weakness of the middle class hitherto has lain in the fact

that they have never learned to combine; but if you frighten them into

combining against you, you may find that you have raised up a devil. We had

a brief glimpse of this possibility in the General Strike.

To sum up: There is no chance of righting the conditions I described

in the earlier chapters of this book, or of saving England from Fascism,

unless we can bring an effective Socialist party into existence. It will

have to be a party with genuinely revolutionary intentions, and it will

have to be numerically strong enough to act. We can only get it if we offer $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

an objective which fairly ordinary people will recognize as desirable.

Beyond all else, therefore, we need intelligent

propaganda. Less about 'class consciousness', 'expropriation of the expropriators', 'bourgeois ideology', and 'proletarian solidarity', not to mention the sacred sisters, thesis, antithesis, and synthesis; and more about justice, liberty, and the plight of the unemployed. And less about mechanical progress, tractors, the Dnieper dam, and the latest salmon-canning factory in Moscow; that kind of thing is not an integral part of Socialist doctrine, and it drives away many people whom the Socialist cause needs, including most of those who can hold a pen. All that is needed is to hammer two facts home into the public consciousness. One, that the interests of all exploited people are the same; the other, that Socialism is compatible with common decency.

As for the terribly difficult issue of class-distinctions, the only possible policy for the moment is to go easy and not frighten more people than can be helped. And above all, no more of those muscular-curate efforts at class-breaking. If you belong to the bourgeoisie, don't be too eager to bound forward and embrace your proletarian brothers; they may not like it, and if they show that they don't like it you will probably find that your class-prejudices are not so dead as you imagined. And if you belong to the proletariat, by birth or in the sight of God, don't sneer too automatically at the Old School Tie; it covers loyalties which can be useful to you if you know how to handle them.

Yet I believe there is some hope that when Socialism

is a living

issue, a thing that large numbers of Englishmen genuinely care about, the

class-difficulty may solve itself more rapidly than now seems thinkable. In

the next few years we shall either get that effective Socialist party that

we need, or we shall not get it. If we do not get it, then Fascism is

coming; probably a slimy Anglicized form of Fascism,
with cultured

policemen instead of Nazi gorillas and the lion and the unicorn instead of

the swastika. But if we do get it there will be a struggle, conceivably a

physical one, for our plutocracy will not sit quiet under a genuinely

revolutionary government. And when the widely separate classes who,

necessarily, would form any real Socialist party have fought side by side,

they may feel differently about one another. And then perhaps this misery

of class-prejudice will fade away, and we of the sinking middle class--

the private schoolmaster, the half-starved free-lance journalist, the

colonel's spinster daughter with L75 a year, the jobless Cambridge

graduate, the ship's officer without a ship, the clerks, the civil

servants, the commercial travellers, and the thrice-bankrupt drapers in the

country towns--may sink without further struggles into the working class

where we belong, and probably when we get there it will not be so dreadful

as we feared, for, after all, we have nothing to lose but our aitches.

THE END